## Essays in Applied Econometrics and Education

## Citation

Barrios，Thomas．2014．Essays in Applied Econometrics and Education．Doctoral dissertation， Harvard University．

## Permanent link

http：／／nrs．harvard．edu／urn－3：HUL．InstRepos：12274546

## Terms of Use

This article was downloaded from Harvard University＇s DASH repository，and is made available under the terms and conditions applicable to Other Posted Material，as set forth at http：／／ nrs．harvard．edu／urn－3：HUL．InstRepos：dash．current．terms－of－use\＃LAA

## Share Your Story

The Harvard community has made this article openly available．
Please share how this access benefits you．Submit a story．

Accessibility

# Essays in Applied Econometrics and Education 

A dissertation presented<br>by<br>Thomas Barrios

to

The Department of Economics
in partial fulfillment of the requirements
for the degree of
Doctor of Philosophy
in the subject of
Economics

Harvard University
Cambridge, Massachusetts
April 2014
(c) 2014 Thomas Barrios

All rights reserved.

| Dissertation Advisors: | Thomas $\underline{\underline{\text { Author: }}}$ |
| :--- | ---: |
| Professor Edward Glaeser |  |
| Professor Lawrence Katz |  |

## Essays in Applied Econometrics and Education


#### Abstract

This dissertation consists of three essays. First, we explore the implications of correlations that do not vanishing for units in different clusters for the actual and estimated precision of least squares estimators. Our main theoretical result is that with equal-sized clusters, if the covariate of interest is randomly assigned at the cluster level, only accounting for nonzero covariances at the cluster level, and ignoring correlations between clusters as well as differences in within-cluster correlations, leads to valid confidence intervals. Next, we examine the choice of pairs in matched pair randomized experiments. We show that stratifying on the conditional expectation of the outcome given baseline variables is optimal in matched-pair randomized experiments. Last, we measure the effect of decreased course availability on grades, degree attainment, and transfer to four-year colleges using a regression discontinuity from course enrollment queues due to oversubscribed courses. We find that in the short run students substitute unavailable courses with others.


## Contents

Abstract ..... iii
Acknowledgments ..... ix
Introduction ..... 1
1 Clustering, Spatial Correlations and Randomization Inference ..... 3
1.1 Introduction ..... 3
1.2 Framework ..... 5
1.3 Spatial Correlation Patterns in Earnings ..... 8
1.4 Randomization Inference ..... 17
1.5 Randomization Inference with Cluster-level Randomization ..... 19
1.6 Variance Estimation Under Misspecification ..... 21
1.7 Spatial Correlation in State Averages ..... 23
1.8 A Small Simulation Study ..... 26
1.9 Conclusion ..... 29
2 Optimal Stratification in Randomized Experiments ..... 30
2.1 Introduction ..... 30
2.2 Main Result ..... 34
2.2.1 General solution to the matching problem ..... 41
2.3 Matching in Practice ..... 43
2.4 Inference in Matched Pair Randomization ..... 45
2.4.1 Treatment Compliance ..... 46
2.5 Model Selection and Prediction Methods ..... 46
2.5.1 AIC and BIC ..... 47
2.5.2 Ridge and Lasso ..... 50
2.6 Data and Simulations ..... 51
2.6.1 Dataset descriptions ..... 51
2.6.2 Data generating process ..... 53
2.6.3 Benchmark performance ..... 56
2.6.4 Choice of matching variable ..... 57
2.6.5 Are standard errors the correct size? ..... 57
2.6.6 Performance with smaller training set ..... 59
2.6.7 Performance in small experiments ..... 59
2.6.8 Performance in large experiments ..... 60
2.7 Literature ..... 61
2.7.1 Extensions to other randomization settings ..... 66
2.8 Conclusion ..... 68
3 Course Availability and College Enrollment: Evidence from administrative data and enrollment discontinuities ..... 69
3.1 Introduction ..... 69
3.2 Institutional Background and Data ..... 72
3.2.1 Course Enrollment ..... 73
3.2.2 Instrument Construction ..... 74
3.3 Identification and Reduced-Form Evidence ..... 77
3.3.1 Identification ..... 77
3.3.2 First Stage ..... 80
3.3.3 Validity Checks ..... 82
3.3.4 No Sorting Across Wait List Position ..... 83
3.3.5 Reduced Form Evidence ..... 85
3.4 IV Results ..... 87
3.4.1 Course Enrollment ..... 88
3.4.2 GPA and Persistence ..... 91
3.4.3 Enrollment at 4-year and other 2-year colleges ..... 91
3.5 Subgroup Analysis and Robustness Checks ..... 92
3.6 Conclusions ..... 95
References ..... 96
Appendix A Appendix to Chapter 1 ..... 104
A. 1 Supplementary Results ..... 104
Appendix B Appendix to Chapter 2 ..... 111
B. 1 Supplementary Results ..... 111
B. 2 Supplementary Tables ..... 121
Appendix C Appendix to Chapter 3 ..... 125
C. 1 Supplementary Tables ..... 125

## List of Tables

1.1 Sample Sizes ..... 8
1.2 Summary Statistics ..... 9
1.3 Estimates for Clustering Variances for Demeaned Log Earnings ..... 13
1.4 p-values for Mantel Statistics, based on $10,000,000$ draws and one-sided alternatives ..... 25
1.5 Size of $t$-tests (in \%) using different variance estimators ( 500,000 draws). ..... 28
2.1 Counter example where treatment effect not independent of $(X, \epsilon)$ ..... 41
2.2 Dataset Summary Statistics ..... 55
2.3 DGP Descriptions 1-3 ..... 56
2.4 DGP Descriptions 4-6 ..... 57
2.5 Mean Squared Error for Multiple Randomization Methods ..... 58
2.6 Size control for Multiple Randomization Methods ..... 58
2.7 Power for Multiple Randomization Methods ..... 59
3.1 Hypothetical Enrollment Log ..... 75
3.2 Summary Statistics: Race ..... 76
3.3 Summary Statistics: Demographics ..... 77
3.4 First Stage OLS Regressions ..... 82
3.5 TSLS Estimates of Effects on Course Enrollment ..... 89
3.6 TSLS Estimates of Effects on Course Enrollment (CCT) ..... 90
3.7 TSLS Estimates of Effects on GPA and Persistence (CCT) ..... 91
3.8 TSLS Estimates of Effects on Four-Year College and Two-Year College Enrollment ..... 92
B. 1 Mean Squared Error for Multiple Randomization Methods 1 ..... 121
B. 2 Size control for Multiple Randomization Methods 1 ..... 121
B. 3 Power for Multiple Randomization Methods 1 ..... 122
B. 4 Mean Squared Error for Multiple Randomization Methods 2 ..... 122
B. 5 Size control for Multiple Randomization Methods 2 ..... 122
B. 6 Power for Multiple Randomization Methods 2 ..... 123
B. 7 Mean Squared Error for Multiple Randomization Methods 3 ..... 123
B. 8 Size control for Multiple Randomization Methods 3 ..... 123
B. 9 Power for Multiple Randomization Methods 3 ..... 124
C. 1 Cubic Local Polynomial Results, (CCT). ..... 126
C. 2 Local Linear TSLS, with control variables (BW of 5) ..... 127
C. 3 Local Linear TSLS, with more extensive control variables (BW of 5) ..... 128
C. 4 Local Linear TSLS, with more extensive control variables (BW of 3) ..... 129

## List of Figures

1.1 Covariance of Demeaned Log(Earnings) by Distance Between Individuals ..... 11
1.2 Covariance of Demeaned Log(Earnings) by Distance Between Individuals ..... 12
1.3 States with minimum wage higher than federal minimum wage ..... 15
1.4 New England/East North Central States ..... 16
2.1 Counter example where treatment effect not independent of $(X, \epsilon)$ ..... 42
2.2 How auxiliary data is used in Matched Pair Randomization ..... 44
3.1 First Stage: Mean Enrollment in Wait-listed Section as a Function of Relative Wait ..... 81
3.2 Smoothness on Covariates: Race and Citizenship Indicators ..... 83
3.3 Smoothness on Covariates: Age, Gender, a priori Education ..... 84
3.4 No Sorting Across Wait-list position ..... 85
3.5 Enrollment in Other Sections, all subjects, concurrent term ..... 86
3.6 Enrollment in Other Sections in the same subject, concurrent term ..... 87
3.7 Stayed in School, 1 year ..... 88

## Acknowledgments

Financial support for research in the first chapter was generously provided through NSF grant 0820361. My coauthors and I are grateful for comments by participants in the econometrics lunch seminar at Harvard University, and in particular for discussions with Gary Chamberlain. I am grateful to my Ph.D. advisers Gary Chamberlain, Ed Glaeser, Guido Imbens, and Larry Katz for their generous guidance in writing the second chapter. I thank Don Rubin, Max Kasy, Claudia Goldin, Stefano DellaVigna, Roland Fryer, Michael Kremer, Sendhil Mullainathan, Jose Montiel Olea, Raj Chetty, Rick Hornbeck, Nathaniel Hilger, and Silvia Robles for helpful comments. I am grateful to seminar participants at the Harvard Labor, Development, and Econometrics workshops and at the MIT Development workshop. Financial support for research in the second chapter was generously provided through an Education Innovation Lab Research Fellowship. My coauthors and I thank Larry Katz and Ed Glaeser for helpful comments on the third chapter. We thank Dean Jerry Rosenberg for helpful information on registration and wait lists.

To my parents, Susan Ipongi, Greg Butler, Gail Bunch, Michele Thompson, Richard Rankins, Robert Lawson, Moori Schiesel-Manning, Richard Nolan, David Lee, and Theresa Olele.

## Introduction

This dissertation consists of three chapters. The first examines clustering, spatial correlation and randomization inference. The second explores optimal stratification in matched pair randomized experiments. The third uses evidence from administrative data and enrollment discontinuities to examine the effect course availability on college enrollment.

The first chapter is motivated by the observation that it is standard practice in empirical work to allow for clustering in the error covariance matrix if the explanatory variables of interest vary at a more aggregate level than the units of observation. Often, however, the structure of the error covariance matrix is more complex, with correlations varying in magnitude within clusters, and not vanishing between clusters. Here we explore the implications of such correlations for the actual and estimated precision of least squares estimators. We show that with equal sized clusters, if the covariate of interest is randomly assigned at the cluster level, only accounting for non-zero covariances at the cluster level, and ignoring correlations between clusters, leads to valid standard errors and confidence intervals. However, in many cases this may not suffice. For example, state policies exhibit substantial spatial correlations. As a result, ignoring spatial correlations in outcomes beyond that accounted for by the clustering at the state level, may well bias standard errors. We illustrate our findings using the $5 \%$ public use census data. Based on these results we recommend researchers assess the extent of spatial correlations in explanatory variables beyond state level clustering, and if such correlations are present, take into account spatial correlations beyond the clustering correlations typically accounted for.

The second chapter is motivated by the question of how best to randomize with many baseline
covariates. We show that stratifying on the conditional expectation of the outcome given baseline variables is optimal in matched-pair randomized experiments. The assignment minimizes the variance of the post-treatment difference in mean outcomes between treatment and controls. Optimal pairing depends only on predicted values of outcomes for experimental units, where the predicted values are the conditional expectations. After randomization, both frequentist inference and randomization inference depend only on the actual strata chosen and not on estimated predicted values. This gives experimenters a way to use big data (possibly more covariates than the number of experimental units) ex-ante while maintaining simple post-experiment inference techniques. Optimizing the randomization with respect to one outcome allows researchers to credibly signal the outcome of interest prior to the experiment. Inference can be conducted in the standard way by regressing the outcome on treatment and strata indicators. We illustrate the application of the methodology by running simulations based on a set of field experiments. We find that optimal designs have mean squared errors $23 \%$ less than randomized designs, on average. In one case, mean squared error is $43 \%$ less than randomized designs.

The third chapter examines the effect course availability on college enrollment. Community colleges serve close to half of the undergraduate students in the United States and tuition at two-year public/nonprofit colleges is mostly a public expenditure. We measure the effect of decreased course availability on grades, degree attainment, and transfer to four-year colleges using a regression discontinuity from course enrollment queues due to oversubscribed courses. Using a panel from a large California community college and the National Student Clearinghouse we find that in the short run students substitute unavailable courses with others. We find no significant effects on later outcomes, given the precision of our tests, however we cannot rule out economically significant effects.

## Chapter 1

## Clustering, Spatial Correlations and Randomization Inference ${ }^{11}$

### 1.1 Introduction

Many economic studies that analyze the effects of interventions on economic behavior study interventions that are constant within clusters whereas the outcomes vary at a more disaggregate level. In a typical example, and the one we focus on in this paper, outcomes are measured at the individual level, whereas interventions or treatments vary only at the state (cluster) level. Often, the effect of interventions is estimated using least squares regression. Since the mid-eighties (Liang and Zeger, 1986; Moulton, 1986), empirical researchers in social sciences have generally been aware of the implications of within-cluster correlations in outcomes for the precision of such estimates. The typical approach is to allow for correlation between outcomes in the same cluster in the specification of the error covariance matrix. However, there may well be more complex correlation patterns in the data.

[^0]Correlation in outcomes between individuals may extend beyond state boundaries, it may vary in magnitude between states, and it may be stronger in more narrowly defined geographical areas.

In this paper we investigate the implications, for the repeated sampling variation of least squares estimators based on individual-level data, of the presence of correlation structures beyond those which are constant within and identical across states, and which vanish between states. First, we address the empirical question whether in census data on earnings with states as clusters such correlation patterns are present to a substantially meaningful degree. We estimate general spatial correlations for the logarithm of earnings, and find that, indeed, such correlations are present, with substantial correlations within groups of nearby states, and correlations within smaller geographic units (specifically pumas, public use microdata areas) considerably larger than within states. Second, we address whether accounting for such correlations is important for the properties of confidence intervals for the effects of state-level regulations. We report theoretical results, as well as demonstrate their relevance both using illustrations based on earnings data and state regulations, and Monte Carlo evidence. The theoretical results show that if covariate values are as good as randomly assigned to clusters, implying there is no spatial correlation in the covariates beyond the clusters, variance estimators that incorporate only cluster-level outcome correlations remain valid despite the misspecification of the error-covariance matrix. Whether this theoretical result is useful in practice depends on the magnitude of the spatial correlations in the covariates. We provide some illustrations that show that, given the spatial correlation patterns we find in the individual-level variables, spatial correlations in state level regulations can have a substantial impact on the precision of estimates of the effects of interventions.

The paper draws on three strands of literature that have largely evolved separately. First, it is related to the literature on clustering and difference-in-differences estimation, where a primary focus is on adjustments to standard errors to take into account clustering of explanatory variables. See, e.g., Liang and Zeger (1986), Moulton (1986), Bertrand, Duflo, and Mullainathan (2004), Hansen (2009), and the textbook discussions in Angrist and Pischke (2009), Diggle, Heagerty, Liang, and Zeger (2002), and Wooldridge (2002). Second, the current paper draws on the literature on spatial statistics. Here a major focus is on the specification and estimation of the covariance structure of spatially linked data.

For a textbook discussion see Schabenberger and Gotway (2004). In interesting recent work Bester, Conley and Hansen (2009) and Ibragimov and Müller (2009) link some of the inferential issues in the spatial and clustering literatures. Finally, we use results from the literature on randomization inference going back to Fisher (1925) and Neyman (1923). For a recent discussion see Rosenbaum (2002). Although the calculation of Fisher exact p-values based on randomization inference is frequently used in the spatial statistics literature (e.g., Schabenberger and Gotway, 2004), and sometimes in the clustering literature (Bertrand, Duflo and Mullainathan, 2004; Abadie, Diamond, and Hainmueller, 2009), Neyman's approach to constructing confidence intervals using the randomization distribution is rarely used in these settings. We will argue that the randomization perspective provides useful insights into the interpretation of confidence intervals in the context of spatially linked data.

The paper is organized as follows. In Section 1.2 we introduce the basic set-up. Next, in Section 1.3 , using census data on earnings, we establish the presence of spatial correlation patterns beyond the constant-within-state correlations typically allowed for. In Section 1.4 we discuss randomization-based methods for inference, first focusing on the case with randomization at the individual level. Section 1.5 extends the results to cluster-level randomization. In Section 1.6, we present the main theoretical results. We show that if cluster-level covariates are randomly assigned to the clusters, the standard variance estimator based on within-cluster correlations can be robust to misspecification of the errorcovariance matrix. Next, in Section 1.7 we show, using Mantel-type tests, that a number of regulations exhibit substantial regional correlations, suggesting that ignoring the error correlation structure may not be justified. Section 1.8 reports the results of a small simulation study. Section 1.9 concludes. Proofs are collected in an appendix.

### 1.2 Framework

Consider a setting where we have information on $N$ units, say individuals in the United States, indexed by $i=1, \ldots, N$. Associated with each unit is a location $Z_{i}$, measuring latitude and longitude for individual $i$. Associated with a location $z$ are a unique puma $P(z)$ (public use microdata area, a
census-defined area with at least 100,000 individuals), a state $S(z)$, and a division $D(z)$ (also a census defined concept, with nine divisions in the United States). In our application the sample is divided into 9 divisions, which are then divided into a total of 49 states (we leave out individuals from Hawaii and Alaska, and include the District of Columbia as a separate state), which are then divided into 2,057 pumas. For individual $i$, with location $Z_{i}$, let $P_{i}, S_{i}$, and $D_{i}$, denote the puma, state, and division associated with the location $Z_{i}$. The distance $d\left(z, z^{\prime}\right)$ between two locations $z$ and $z^{\prime}$ is defined as the shortest distance, in miles, on the earth's surface connecting the two points. To be precise, let $z=\left(z_{\text {lat }}, z_{\text {long }}\right)$ be the latitude and longitude of a location. Then the formula for the distance in miles between two locations $z$ and $z^{\prime}$ we use is

$$
d\left(z, z^{\prime}\right)=3,959 \times \arccos \left(\cos \left(z_{\text {long }}-z_{\text {long }}^{\prime}\right) \cdot \cos \left(z_{\text {lat }}\right) \cdot \cos \left(z_{\text {lat }}^{\prime}\right)+\sin \left(z_{\text {lat }}\right) \cdot \sin \left(z_{\text {lat }}^{\prime}\right)\right) .
$$

In this paper, we focus primarily on estimating the slope coefficient $\beta$ in a linear regression of some outcome $Y_{i}$ (e.g., the logarithm of individual level earnings for working men) on a binary intervention $W_{i}$ (e.g., a state-level regulation), of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{i}=\alpha+\beta \cdot W_{i}+\varepsilon_{i} . \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

A key issue is that the explanatory variable $W_{i}$ may be constant withing clusters of individuals. In our application $W_{i}$ varies at the state level.

Let $\varepsilon$ denote the $N$-vector with typical element $\varepsilon_{i}$, and let $\mathbf{Y}, \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{P}, \mathbf{S}$, and $\mathbf{D}$, denote the $N$-vectors with typical elements $Y_{i}, W_{i}, P_{i}, S_{i}$, and $D_{i}$. Let $\iota_{N}$ denote the $N$-vector of ones, let $X_{i}=\left(1, W_{i}\right)$, and let $\mathbf{X}$ and $\mathbf{Z}$ denote the $N \times 2$ matrices with ith rows equal to $X_{i}$ and $Z_{i}$, respectively, so that we can write in matrix notation

$$
\mathbf{Y}=\iota_{N} \cdot \alpha+\mathbf{W} \cdot \beta+\varepsilon=\mathbf{X}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\alpha & \beta \tag{1.2}
\end{array}\right)^{\prime}+\varepsilon .
$$

Let $N_{1}=\sum_{i=1}^{N} W_{i}, N_{0}=N-N_{1}, \bar{W}=N_{1} / N$, and $\bar{Y}=\sum_{i=1}^{N} Y_{i} / N$. We are interested in the distribution of the ordinary least squares estimators:

$$
\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{ols}}=\frac{\sum_{i=1}^{N}\left(Y_{i}-\bar{Y}\right) \cdot\left(W_{i}-\bar{W}\right)}{\sum_{i=1}^{N}\left(W_{i}-\bar{W}\right)^{2}}, \quad \text { and } \hat{\alpha}_{\mathrm{ols}}=\bar{Y}-\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{ols}} \cdot \bar{W}
$$

The starting point is the following model for the conditional distribution of $\mathbf{Y}$ given the location $\mathbf{Z}$ and the covariate $\mathbf{W}$ :

Assumption 1. (Model)

$$
\mathbf{Y} \mid \mathbf{W}=\mathbf{w}, \mathbf{Z}=\mathbf{z} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(\iota_{N} \cdot \alpha+\mathbf{w} \cdot \beta, \Omega(\mathbf{z})\right)
$$

Under this assumption we can infer the exact (finite sample) distribution of the least squares estimator, conditional on the covariates $\mathbf{X}$, and the locations $\mathbf{Z}$.

Lemma 1. (Distribution of Least Squares Estimator) Suppose Assumption 1 holds. Then $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ is unbiased and Normally distributed,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{E}\left[\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{ols}} \mid \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z}\right]=\beta, \quad \text { and } \quad \hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{ols}} \mid \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(\beta, \mathbb{V}_{M}(\mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z})\right), \tag{1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\mathbb{V}_{M}(\mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z})=\frac{1}{N^{2} \cdot \bar{W}^{2} \cdot(1-\bar{W})^{2}}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\bar{W} & -1
\end{array}\right)\left(\iota_{N} \quad \mathbf{W}\right)^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z})\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\iota_{N} & \mathbf{W} \tag{1.4}
\end{array}\right)\binom{\bar{W}}{-1}
$$

We write the model-based variance $\mathbb{V}_{M}(\mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z})$ as a function of $\mathbf{W}$ and $\mathbf{Z}$ to make explicit that this variance is conditional on both the treatment indicators $\mathbf{W}$ and the locations $\mathbf{Z}$. This lemma follows directly from the standard results on least squares estimation and is given without proof. Given Assumption 1, the exact distribution for the least squares coefficients ( $\left.\hat{\alpha}_{\text {ols }}, \hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}\right)^{\prime}$ is Normal, centered at $(\alpha, \beta)^{\prime}$ and with covariance matrix $\left(\mathbf{X}^{\prime} \mathbf{X}\right)^{-1}\left(\mathbf{X}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}) \mathbf{X}\right)\left(\mathbf{X}^{\prime} \mathbf{X}\right)^{-1}$. We then obtain 1.4 by writing out the component matrices of the joint variance of $\left(\hat{\alpha}_{\text {ols }}, \hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}\right)^{\prime}$.

It is also useful to consider the variance of $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$, conditional on the locations $\mathbf{Z}$, and conditional on $N_{1}=\sum_{i=1}^{N} W_{i}$, without conditioning on the entire vector $\mathbf{W}$. With some abuse of language, we refer to this as the unconditional variance $\mathbb{V}_{U}(\mathbf{Z})$ (although it is still conditional on $\mathbf{Z}$ and $N_{1}$ ). Because the conditional and unconditional expectation of $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ are both equal to $\beta$, it follows that the unconditional
variance is simply the expected value of the conditional variance:

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathbb{V}_{U}(\mathbf{Z}) & =\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{V}_{M}(\mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z}) \mid \mathbf{Z}\right] \\
& =\frac{N^{2}}{N_{0}^{2} \cdot N_{1}^{2}} \cdot \mathbb{E}\left[\left(\mathbf{W}-N_{1} / N \cdot \iota_{N}\right)^{\prime} \Omega\left(\mathbf{W}-N_{1} / N \cdot \iota_{N}\right) \mid \mathbf{Z}\right] . \tag{1.5}
\end{align*}
$$

### 1.3 Spatial Correlation Patterns in Earnings

In this section we provide some evidence for the presence and structure of spatial correlations, that is, how $\Omega$ varies with $\mathbf{Z}$. Specifically we show in our application, first, that the structure is more general than the state-level correlations that are typically allowed for, and second, that this matters for inference. We use data from the $5 \%$ public use sample from the 2000 census outlined in Table 1.1 .

Table 1.1: Sample Sizes

|  |  |
| :--- | ---: |
| Number of observation in the sample | $2,590,190$ |
|  |  |
| Number of PUMAs in the sample | 2,057 |
| Average number of observations per PUMA | 1,259 |
| Standard deviation of number of observations per PUMA | 409 |
|  |  |
| Number of states (incl DC, excl AK, HA, PR) in the sample | 49 |
| Average number of observations per state | 52,861 |
| Standard deviation of number of observations per state | 58,069 |
|  |  |
| Number of divisions in the sample | 9 |
| Average number of observations per division | 287,798 |
| Standard deviation of number of observations per division | 134,912 |

Our sample consists of $2,590,190$ men at least 20 and at most 50 years old, with positive earnings. We exclude individuals from Alaska, Hawaii, and Puerto Rico (these states share no boundaries with other states, and as a result spatial correlations may be very different than those for other states), and treat DC as a separate state, for a total of 49 "states". Table 1.2 presents some summary statistics for the sample. Our primary outcome variable is the logarithm of yearly earnings, in deviations from the overall mean, denoted by $Y_{i}$. The overall mean of log earnings is 10.17 , the overall standard deviation
is 0.97 . We do not have individual level locations. Instead we know for each individual only the puma (public use microdata area) of residence, and so we take $Z_{i}$ to be the latitude and longitude of the center of the puma of residence.

Table 1.2: Summary Statistics

|  | log earnings | years of educ | hours worked |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Average | 10.17 | 13.05 | 43.76 |
| Stand Dev | 0.97 | 2.81 | 11.00 |
|  |  |  |  |
| Average of PUMA Averages | 10.17 | 13.06 | 43.69 |
| Stand Dev of PUMA Averages | 0.27 | 0.95 | 1.63 |
|  |  |  |  |
| Average of State Averages | 10.14 | 13.12 | 43.94 |
| Stand Dev of State Averages | 0.12 | 0.33 | 0.75 |
|  |  |  |  |
| Average of Division Averages | 10.17 | 13.08 | 43.80 |
| Stand Dev of Division Averages | 0.09 | 0.31 | 0.48 |

Let $\mathbf{Y}$ be the variable of interest, in our case log earnings in deviations from the overall mean. Suppose we model the vector $\mathbf{Y}$ as

$$
\mathbf{Y} \mid \mathbf{Z} \sim \mathcal{N}(0, \Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma))
$$

If researchers have covariates that vary at the state level, the conventional strategy is to allow for correlation at the same level of aggregation ("clustering by state"), and model the covariance matrix as

$$
\Omega_{i j}(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)=\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} \cdot \mathbf{1}_{i=j}+\sigma_{S}^{2} \cdot \mathbf{1}_{S_{i}=S_{j}}= \begin{cases}\sigma_{S}^{2}+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} & \text { if } i=j  \tag{1.6}\\ \sigma_{S}^{2} & \text { if } i \neq j, S_{i}=S_{j} \\ 0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

where $\Omega_{i j}(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)$ is the $(i, j)$ th element of $\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)$. The first variance component, $\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}$, captures the variance of idiosyncratic errors, uncorrelated across different individuals. The second variance component, $\sigma_{S}^{2}$ captures correlations between individuals in the same state. Estimating $\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}$ and $\sigma_{S}^{2}$ on our sample of 2,590,190 individuals by maximum likelihood leads to $\hat{\sigma}_{\varepsilon}^{2}=0.929$ and $\hat{\sigma}_{S}^{2}=0.016$. The question addressed in this section is whether the covariance structure in (1.6) provides an accurate
approximation to the true covariance matrix $\Omega(\mathbf{Z})$. We provide two pieces of evidence that it is not.

The first piece of evidence against the simple covariance matrix structure is based on simple descriptive measures of the correlation patterns as a function of distance between individuals. For a distance $d$ (in miles), define the overall, within-state, and out-of-state covariances as

$$
\begin{gathered}
C(d)=\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i} \cdot Y_{j} \mid d\left(Z_{i}, Z_{j}\right)=d\right], \\
C_{S}(d)=\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i} \cdot Y_{j} \mid S_{i}=S_{j}, d\left(Z_{i}, Z_{j}\right)=d\right],
\end{gathered}
$$

and

$$
C_{\bar{S}}(d)=\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i} \cdot Y_{j} \mid S_{i} \neq S_{j}, d\left(Z_{i}, Z_{j}\right)=d\right] .
$$

If the model in 1.6 was correct, then $C_{S}(d)$ should be constant (but possibly non-zero) as a function of the distance $d$, and $C_{\bar{S}}(d)$ should be equal to zero for all $d$.

We estimate these covariances using averages of the products of individual level outcomes for pairs of individuals whose distance is within some bandwidth $h$ of the distance $d$ :

$$
\begin{gathered}
\widehat{C(d)}=\sum_{i<j} \mathbf{1}_{\left|d\left(Z_{i}, Z_{j}\right)-d\right| \leq h} \cdot Y_{i} \cdot Y_{j} / \sum_{i<j} \mathbf{1}_{\left|d\left(Z_{i}, Z_{j}\right)-d\right| \leq h}, \\
\widehat{C_{S}(d)}=\sum_{i<j, S_{i}=S_{j}} \mathbf{1}_{\left|d\left(Z_{i}, Z_{j}\right)-d\right| \leq h} \cdot Y_{i} \cdot Y_{j} \mid \sum_{i<j, S_{i}=S_{j}} \mathbf{1}_{\left|d\left(Z_{i}, Z_{j}\right)-d\right| \leq h},
\end{gathered}
$$

and

$$
\widehat{C_{\bar{S}}(d)}=\left.\sum_{i<j} \mathbf{1}_{S_{i} \neq S_{j}} \cdot \mathbf{1}_{\left|d\left(Z_{i}, Z_{j}\right)-d\right| \leq h} \cdot Y_{i} \cdot Y_{j}\right|_{i<j, S_{i} \neq S_{j}} \mathbf{1}_{\left|d\left(Z_{i}, Z_{j}\right)-d\right| \leq h} .
$$

Figures 1.1 and 1.2 show the covariance functions for two choices of the bandwidth, $h=20$ and $h=50$ miles, for the overall, within-state, and out-of-state covariances. The main conclusion from the center panels of the figures is that within-state correlations decrease with distance. The lower panels of the figures suggest that correlations for individuals in different states are non-zero, also decrease with distance, and are of a magnitude similar to within-state correlations. Thus, these figures suggest that the simple covariance model in (1.6) is not an accurate representation of the true covariance
structure.

Figure 1.1: Covariance of Demeaned Log(Earnings) by Distance Between Individuals


As a second piece of evidence we consider various parametric structures for the covariance matrix $\Omega(\mathbf{Z})$ that generalize 1.6 . At the most general level, we specify the following form for $\Omega_{i j}(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)$ :

$$
\Omega_{i j}(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)= \begin{cases}\sigma_{\text {dist }}^{2} \cdot \exp \left(-\alpha \cdot d\left(Z_{i}, Z_{j}\right)\right)+\sigma_{D}^{2}+\sigma_{S}^{2}+\sigma_{P}^{2}+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} & \text { if } i=j,  \tag{1.7}\\ \sigma_{\text {dist }}^{2} \cdot \exp \left(-\alpha \cdot d\left(Z_{i}, Z_{j}\right)\right)+\sigma_{D}^{2}+\sigma_{S}^{2}+\sigma_{P}^{2} & \text { if } i \neq j, P_{i}=P_{j}, \\ \sigma_{\text {dist }}^{2} \cdot \exp \left(-\alpha \cdot d\left(Z_{i}, Z_{j}\right)\right)+\sigma_{D}^{2}+\sigma_{S}^{2} & \text { if } P_{i} \neq P_{j}, S_{i}=S_{j}, \\ \sigma_{\text {dist }}^{2} \cdot \exp \left(-\alpha \cdot d\left(Z_{i}, Z_{j}\right)\right)+\sigma_{D}^{2} & \text { if } S_{i} \neq S_{j}, D_{i}=D_{j}, \\ \sigma_{\text {dist }}^{2} \cdot \exp \left(-\alpha \cdot d\left(Z_{i}, Z_{j}\right)\right) & \text { if } D_{i} \neq D_{j} .\end{cases}
$$

Figure 1.2: Covariance of Demeaned Log(Earnings) by Distance Between Individuals


Beyond state level correlations this specification allows for correlations at the puma level (captured by $\sigma_{P}^{2}$ ) and at the division level (captured by $\sigma_{D}^{2}$ ). In addition we allow for spatial correlation as a smooth function geographical distance, declining at an exponential rate, captured by $\sigma_{\text {dist }}^{2} \cdot \exp \left(-\alpha \cdot d\left(z, z^{\prime}\right)\right)$. Although more general than the typical covariance structure allowed for, this model still embodies important restrictions, notably that correlations do not vary by location. A more general model might allow variances or covariances to vary directly by the location $z$, e.g., with correlations stronger or weaker in the Western versus the Eastern United States, or in more densely or sparsely populated parts of the country.

Table 1.3 gives maximum likelihood estimates for the covariance parameters $\gamma$ given various re-

Table 1.3: Estimates for Clustering Variances for Demeaned Log Earnings

| $\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}$ | $\sigma_{D}^{2}$ | $\sigma_{S}^{2}$ | $\sigma_{P}^{2}$ | $\sigma_{\text {dis }}^{2}$ | $a$ | LLH | ¢.e. $(\hat{\beta})$ |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Min Wage | NE/ENC |
| $\begin{gathered} 0.9388 \\ {[0.0008]} \end{gathered}$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1213298.1 | 0.0015 | 0.0015 |
| $\begin{gathered} 0.9294 \\ {[0.0008]} \end{gathered}$ | 0 | $\begin{gathered} 0.01610 \\ {[0.0018]} \end{gathered}$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1200407.0 | 0.0700 | 0.057 |
| $\begin{gathered} 0.8683 \\ {[0.0008]} \end{gathered}$ | 0 | $\begin{gathered} 0.0111 \\ {[0.0029]} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0659 \\ {[0.0022]} \end{gathered}$ | 0 | 0 | 1116976.4 | 0.0679 | 0.049 |
| $\begin{gathered} 0.9294 \\ {[0.0008]} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0056 \\ {[0.0020]} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0108 \\ {[0.0020]} \end{gathered}$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1200403.1 | 0.0909 | 0.081 |
| $\begin{gathered} 0.8683 \\ {[0.0008]} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0056 \\ {[0.0033]} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0058 \\ {[0.0021]} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0660 \\ {[0.0021]} \end{gathered}$ | 0 | 0 | 1116972.0 | 0.0805 | 0.0760 |
| $\begin{gathered} 0.8683 \\ {[0.0008]} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0080 \\ {[0.0049]} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0008 \\ {[0.0012]} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0331 \\ {[0.0021]} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0324 \\ {[0.0030]} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0468 \\ {[0.0051]} \end{gathered}$ | 1603400.9 | 0.0860 | 0.0854 |

strictions, based on the log earnings data, with standard errors based on the second derivatives of the $\log$ likelihood function. To put these numbers in perspective, the estimated value for $\alpha$ in the most general model, $\hat{\alpha}=0.0293$, implies that the pure spatial component, $\sigma_{\text {dist }}^{2} \cdot \exp \left(-\alpha \cdot d\left(z, z^{\prime}\right)\right)$, dies out fairly quickly: at a distance of about twenty-five miles the spatial covariance due to the $\sigma_{\text {dist }}^{2} \cdot \exp \left(-\alpha \cdot d\left(z, z^{\prime}\right)\right)$ component is half what it is at zero miles. The covariance of log earnings for two individuals in the same puma is $0.080 / 0.948=0.084$. For these data, the covariance between log earnings and years of education is approximately 0.3 , so the within-puma covariance is substantively important, equal to about $30 \%$ of the log earnings and education covariance. For two individuals in the same state, but in different pumas and ignoring the spatial component, the total covariance is 0.013 . The estimates suggest that much of what shows up as within-state correlations in a model that incorporates only within-state correlations, in fact captures much more local, within-puma, correlations.

To show that these results are typical for the type of correlations found in individual level economic data, we calculated results for the same models as in Table 1.3 for two other variables collected in the census, years of education and hours worked. Results for those variables are reported in an earlier version of the paper that is available online. In all cases puma-level correlations are a magnitude larger than within-state, out-of-puma level correlations, and within-division correlations are of the same order of magnitude as within-state correlations.

The two sets of results, the covariances by distance and the model-based estimates of cluster contributions to the variance, both suggest that the simple model in (1.6) that assumes zero covariances for individuals in different states, and constant covariances for individuals in the same state irrespective of distance, is at odds with the data. Covariances vary substantially within states, and do not vanish at state boundaries.

Now we turn to the second question of this section, whether the magnitude of the correlations we reported matters for inference. In order to assess this we look at the implications of the models for the correlation structure for the precision of least squares estimates. To make this specific, we focus on the model in (1.1), with log earnings as the outcome $Y_{i}$, and $W_{i}$ equal to an indicator that individual $i$ lives in a state with a minimum wage that is higher than the federal minimum wage in the year 2000.

This indicator takes on the value one for individuals living in nine states in our sample, California, Connecticut, Delaware, Massachusetts, Oregon, Rhode Island, Vermont, Washington, and DC, and zero for all other states in our sample (see Figure 1.3 for a visual impression). (The data come from the website http://www.dol.gov/whd/state/stateMinWageHis.htm. To be consistent with the 2000 census, we use the information from 2000, not the current state of the law.)

Figure 1.3: States with minimum wage higher than federal minimum wage


In the second to last column in Table 1.3, under the label "Min Wage," we report in each row the standard error for $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ based on the specification for $\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)$ in that row. To be specific, if $\hat{\Omega}=\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \hat{\gamma})$ is the estimate for $\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)$ in a particular specification, the standard error is

$$
\text { s.e. }\left(\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}\right)=\left(\frac{1}{N^{2} \bar{W}^{2}(1-\bar{W})^{2}}\binom{\bar{W}}{-1}^{\prime}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\iota_{N} & \mathbf{W}
\end{array}\right)^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \hat{\gamma})\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\iota_{N} & \mathbf{W}
\end{array}\right)\binom{\bar{W}}{-1}\right)^{1 / 2}
$$

With no correlation between units at all, the estimated standard error is 0.002 . If we allow only for state level correlations, Model (1.6, the estimated standard error goes up to 0.080 , demonstrating the well known importance of allowing for correlation at the level that the covariate varies. There are two general points to take away from the column with standard errors. First, the biggest impact

Figure 1.4: New England/East North Central States

on the standard errors comes from incorporating state-level correlations (allowing $\sigma_{S}^{2}$ to differ from zero), even though according to the variance component estimates other variance components are substantially more important. Second, among the specifications that allow for $\sigma_{S}^{2} \neq 0$, however, there is still a substantial amount of variation in the implied standard errors. Incorporating only $\sigma_{S}^{2}$ leads to a standard error around 0.0870 , whereas also including division-level correlations ( $\sigma_{D}^{2} \neq 0$ ) increase that to approximately 0.090 , an increase of $15 \%$. We repeat this exercise for a second binary covariate, with the results reported in the last column of Table 1.3. In this case the covariate takes on the value one only for the New England (Massachusetts, Rhode Island, Connecticut, Vermont, New Hampshire) and East-North-Central states (Wisconsin, Michigan, Illinois, Indiana, and Ohio, corresponding to more geographical concentration than for the minimum wage states (see Figure 1.4). In this case the impact on the standard errors of mis-specifying the covariance structure is even bigger, with the most general specification leading to standard errors that are almost $50 \%$ bigger than those based on the state-level correlations specification (1.6). In the next three sections we explore theoretical results that provide some insight into these empirical findings.

### 1.4 Randomization Inference

In this section we consider a different approach to analyzing the distribution of the least squares estimator, based on randomization inference (e.g., Rosenbaum, 2002). Recall the linear model (1.1),

$$
Y_{i}=\alpha+\beta \cdot W_{i}+\varepsilon_{i}, \quad \text { with } \varepsilon \mid \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z} \sim \mathcal{N}(0, \Omega(\mathbf{Z})) .
$$

In Section 1.2 we analyzed the properties of the least squares estimator $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ under repeated sampling. To be precise, the sampling distribution for $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ was defined by repeated sampling in which we keep both the vector of treatments $\mathbf{W}$ and the location $\mathbf{Z}$ fixed on all draws, and redraw only the vector of residuals $\varepsilon$ for each sample. Under this repeated sampling thought-experiment, the exact variance of $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ is $\mathbb{V}_{M}(\mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z})$ as given in Lemma 1 .

It is possible to construct confidence intervals in a different way, based on a different repeated sampling thought-experiment. Instead of conditioning on the vector $\mathbf{W}$ and $\mathbf{Z}$, and resampling the $\varepsilon$, we can condition on $\varepsilon$ and $\mathbf{Z}$, and resample the vector $\mathbf{W}$. To be precise, let $Y_{i}(0)$ and $Y_{i}(1)$ denote the potential outcomes under the two levels of the treatment $W_{i}$, and let $\mathbf{Y}(0)$ and $\mathbf{Y}(1)$ denote the corresponding $N$-vectors. Then let $Y_{i}=Y_{i}\left(W_{i}\right)$ be the realized outcome. We assume that the effect of the treatment is constant, $Y_{i}(1)-Y_{i}(0)=\beta$. Defining $\alpha=\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i}(0)\right]$, the residual is $\varepsilon_{i}=Y_{i}-\alpha-\beta \cdot W_{i}$. In this section we focus on the simplest case, where the covariate of interest $W_{i}$ is completely randomly assigned, conditional on $\sum_{i=1}^{N} W_{i}=N_{1}$.
Assumption 2. Randomization

$$
\operatorname{pr}(\mathbf{W}=\mathbf{w} \mid \mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z})=1 /\binom{N}{N_{1}}, \quad \text { for all } \mathbf{w} \text { s.t. } \sum_{i=1}^{N} w_{i}=N_{1} .
$$

Under this assumption we can infer the exact (finite sample) variance for the least squares estimator for $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ conditional on $\mathbf{Z}$ and $(\mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1))$ :

Lemma 2. Suppose that Assumption 2 holds and that the treatment effect $Y_{i}(1)-Y_{i}(0)=\beta$ is constant
for all individuals. Then $(i), \hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ conditional on $(\mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1))$ and $\mathbf{Z}$ is unbiased for $\beta$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{E}\left[\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{ols}} \mid \mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z}\right]=\beta, \tag{1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

and, (ii), its exact conditional (randomization-based) variance is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{V}_{R}(\mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z})=\mathbb{V}\left(\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{ols}} \mid \mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z}\right)=\frac{N}{N_{0} \cdot N_{1} \cdot(N-2)} \sum_{i=1}^{N}\left(\varepsilon_{i}-\bar{\varepsilon}\right)^{2} \tag{1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\bar{\varepsilon}=\sum_{i=1}^{N} \varepsilon_{i} / N$.

Note that although the variance is exact, we do not have exact Normality, unlike the result in Lemma 1.

In the remainder of this section we explore two implications of the randomization perspective. First of all, although the model and randomization variances $\mathbb{V}_{M}$ and $\mathbb{V}_{R}$ are exact if both Assumptions 1 and 2 hold, they differ because they refer to different conditioning sets. To illustrate this, let us consider the bias and variance under a third repeated sampling thought experiment, without conditioning on either $\mathbf{W}$ or $\varepsilon$, just conditioning on the locations $\mathbf{Z}$ and $\left(N_{0}, N_{1}\right)$, maintaining both the model and the randomization assumption.
Lemma 3. Suppose Assumptions $\left\lceil\right.$ and 2 hold. Then (i), $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ is unbiased for $\beta$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{E}\left[\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{ols}} \mid \mathbf{Z}, N_{0}, N_{1}\right]=\beta, \tag{1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii), its exact unconditional variance is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{V}_{U}(\mathbf{Z})=\left(\frac{1}{N-2} \operatorname{trace}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}))-\frac{1}{N \cdot(N-2)} \iota_{N}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}) \iota_{N}\right) \cdot \frac{N}{N_{0} \cdot N_{1}} \tag{1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

and (iii),

$$
\mathbb{V}_{U}(\mathbf{Z})=\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{V}_{R}(\mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z}) \mid \mathbf{Z}, N_{0}, N_{1}\right]=\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{V}_{M}(\mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z}) \mid \mathbf{Z}, N_{0}, N_{1}\right] .
$$

For the second point, suppose we had focused on the repeated sampling variance for $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ conditional on $\mathbf{W}$ and $\mathbf{Z}$, but possibly erroneously modeled the covariance matrix as constant times the identify matrix, $\Omega(\mathbf{Z})=\sigma^{2} \cdot I_{N}$. Under such a model one would have concluded that the exact sampling
distribution for $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ would be

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{ols}} \mid \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(\beta, \sigma^{2} \cdot \frac{N}{N_{0} \cdot N_{1}}\right), \tag{1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

If the covariate was randomly assigned to the states, the normalized version of this variance would converge to $\mathbb{V}_{R}$ in (1.9). Hence, and this is a key insight of this section, if the assignment $\mathbf{W}$ is completely random, and the treatment effect is constant, one can ignore the off-diagonal elements of $\Omega(\mathbf{Z})$, and (mis-)specify $\Omega(\mathbf{Z})$ as $\sigma^{2} \cdot I_{N}$. Although the resulting variance estimator will not be estimating the variance under the repeated sampling thought experiment that one may have in mind, (namely $\mathbb{V}_{M}(\mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z})$ ), it leads to valid confidence intervals under the randomization distribution. The result that the mis-specification of the covariance matrix need not lead to inconsistent standard errors if the covariate of interest is randomly assigned has been noted previously. Greenwald (1983) writes: "when the correlation patterns of the independent variables are unrelated to those across the errors, then the least squares variance estimates are consistent." Angrist and Pischke (2009) write, in the context of clustering, that: "if the [covariate] values are uncorrelated within the groups, the grouped error structure does not matter for standard errors." The preceding discussion interprets this result formally from a randomization perspective.

### 1.5 Randomization Inference with Cluster-level Randomization

Now let us return to the setting that is the main focus of the paper. The covariate of interest, $W_{i}$, varies only between clusters (states), and is constant within clusters. Instead of assuming that $W_{i}$ is randomly assigned at the individual level, we now assume that it is randomly assigned at the cluster level. Let $M$ be the number of clusters, $M_{1}$ the number of clusters with all individuals assigned $W_{i}=1$, and $M_{0}$ the number of clusters with all individuals assigned to $W_{i}=0$. The cluster indicator is

$$
C_{i m}=\mathbf{1}_{S_{i}=m}= \begin{cases}1 & \text { if individual } i \text { is in cluster } / \text { state } m, \\ 0 & \text { otherwise },\end{cases}
$$

with $\mathbf{C}$ the $N \times M$ matrix with typical element $C_{i m}$. For randomization inference we condition on $\mathbf{Z}, \varepsilon$, and $M_{1}$. Let $N_{m}$ be the number of individuals in cluster $m$. We now look at the properties of $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ over the randomization distribution induced by this assignment mechanism. To keep the notation precise, let $\tilde{\mathbf{W}}$ be the $M$-vector of assignments at the cluster level, with typical element $\tilde{W}_{m}$. Let $\tilde{\mathbf{Y}}(0)$ and $\tilde{\mathbf{Y}}(1)$ be $M$-vectors, with $m$-th element equal to $\tilde{Y}_{m}(0)=\sum_{i: C_{i n}=1} Y_{i}(0) / N_{m}$, and $\tilde{Y}_{m}(1)=\sum_{i: C i m=1} Y_{i}(1) / N_{m}$ respectively. Similarly, let $\tilde{\varepsilon}$ be an $M$-vector with $m$-th element equal to $\tilde{\varepsilon}_{m}=\sum_{i: C_{i m}=1} \varepsilon_{i} / N_{m}$, and let $\overline{\tilde{\varepsilon}}=\sum_{m=1}^{M} \tilde{\varepsilon}_{m} / M$.

Formally the assumption on the assignment mechanism is now:

## Assumption 3. (Cluster Randomization)

$$
\operatorname{pr}(\tilde{\mathbf{W}}=\tilde{\mathbf{w}} \mid \mathbf{Z}=\mathbf{z})=1 /\binom{M}{M_{1}}, \quad \text { for all } \tilde{\mathbf{w}}, \text { s.t. } \sum_{m=1}^{M} \tilde{w}_{m}=M_{1}, \text { and } 0 \text { otherwise. }
$$

We also make the assumption that all clusters are the same size:
Assumption 4. (Equal Cluster Size) $N_{m}=N / M$ for all $m=1, \ldots, M$.
Lemma 4. Suppose Assumptions 3 and 4 hold, and the treatment effect $Y_{i}(1)-Y_{i}(0)=\beta$ is constant. Then ( $i$ ), the exact sampling variance of $\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{ols}}$, conditional on $\mathbf{Z}$ and $\varepsilon$, under the cluster randomization distribution is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{V}_{C R}(\mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z})=\frac{M}{M_{0} \cdot M_{1} \cdot(M-2)} \sum_{m=1}^{M}\left(\tilde{\varepsilon}_{m}-\overline{\tilde{\varepsilon}}\right)^{2} \tag{1.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) if also Assumption $\rceil$ holds, then the unconditional variance is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{V}_{U}(\mathbf{Z})=\frac{M^{2}}{M_{0} \cdot M_{1} \cdot(M-2) \cdot N^{2}} \cdot\left(M \cdot \operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}) \mathbf{C}\right)-\iota^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}) \iota\right) \tag{1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

The unconditional variance is a special case of the expected value of the unconditional variance in (1.5), with the expectation taken over $\mathbf{W}$ given the cluster-level randomization. This result can be generalized by allowing the random assignment to clusters to hold only conditional on covariates.

### 1.6 Variance Estimation Under Misspecification

In this section we present the main theoretical result in the paper. It extends the result in Section 1.4 on the robustness of model-based variance estimators under complete randomization to the case where the model-based variance estimator accounts for clustering, but not necessarily for all spatial correlations, and that treatment is randomized at cluster level.

Suppose the model generating the data is the linear model in (1.1), with a general covariance matrix $\Omega(\mathbf{Z})$, and Assumption 1 holds. The researcher estimates a parametric model that imposes a potentially incorrect structure on the covariance matrix. Let $\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)$ be the parametric model for the error covariance matrix. The model is misspecified in the sense that there need not be a value $\gamma$ such that $\Omega(\mathbf{Z})=\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)$. The researcher then proceeds to calculate the variance of $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ as if the postulated model is correct. The question is whether this implied variance based on a misspecified covariance structure leads to correct inference.

The example we are most interested in is characterized by a clustering structure by state. In that case $\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)$ is the $N \times N$ matrix with $\gamma=\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{S}^{2}\right)^{\prime}$, where

$$
\Omega_{i j}\left(\mathbf{Z}, \sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{S}^{2}\right)= \begin{cases}\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}+\sigma_{S}^{2} & \text { if } i=j  \tag{1.15}\\ \sigma_{S}^{2} & \text { if } i \neq j, S_{i}=S_{j} \\ 0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Initially, however, we allow for any parametric structure $\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)$. The true covariance matrix $\Omega(\mathbf{Z})$ may include correlations that extend beyond state boundaries, and that may involve division-level correlations or spatial correlations that decline smoothly with distance as in the specification (1.7).

Under the (misspecified) parametric model $\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)$, let $\tilde{\gamma}$ be the pseudo true value, defined as the value of $\gamma$ that maximizes the expectation of the logarithm of the likelihood function,

$$
\tilde{\gamma}=\arg \max _{\gamma} \mathbb{E}\left[\left.-\frac{1}{2} \cdot \ln (\operatorname{det}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)))-\frac{1}{2} \cdot \mathbf{Y}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)^{-1} \mathbf{Y} \right\rvert\, \mathbf{Z}\right] .
$$

Given the pseudo true error covariance matrix $\Omega(\tilde{\gamma})$, the corresponding pseudo-true model-based
variance of the least squares estimator, conditional on $\mathbf{W}$ and $\mathbf{Z}$, is

$$
\mathbb{V}_{M}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \tilde{\gamma}), \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z})=\frac{1}{N^{2} \bar{W}^{2}(1-\bar{W})^{2}}\binom{\bar{W}}{-1}^{\prime}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\iota_{N} & \mathbf{W}
\end{array}\right)^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \tilde{\gamma})\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\iota_{N} & \mathbf{W}
\end{array}\right)\binom{\bar{W}}{-1}
$$

Because for some $\mathbf{Z}$ the true covariance matrix $\Omega(\mathbf{Z})$ differs from the misspecified one, $\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \tilde{\gamma})$, it follows that in general this pseudo-true conditional variance $\mathbb{V}_{M}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \tilde{\gamma}), \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z})$ will differ from the true variance $\mathbb{V}_{M}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}), \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z})$. Here we focus on the expected value of $\mathbb{V}_{M}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \tilde{\gamma}), \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z})$, conditional on $\mathbf{Z}$, under assumptions on the distribution of $\mathbf{W}$. Let us denote this expectation by $\mathbb{V}_{U}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \tilde{\gamma}), \mathbf{Z})=\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{V}_{M}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \tilde{\gamma}), \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z}) \mid \mathbf{Z}\right]$. The question is under what conditions on the specification of the error-covariance matrix $\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)$, in combination with assumptions on the assignment process, this unconditional variance is equal to the expected variance with the expectation of the variance under the correct error-covariance matrix, $\mathbb{V}_{U}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}), \mathbf{Z})=\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{V}_{M}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}), \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z}) \mid \mathbf{Z}\right]$.

The following theorem shows that if the randomization of $\mathbf{W}$ is at the cluster level, then solely accounting for cluster level correlations is sufficient to get valid confidence intervals.

Theorem 1. (Clustering with Misspecified Error-Covariance Matrix)
Suppose that Assumptions 1,3 and 4 hold, and suppose that that $\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)$ is specified as in (1.15). Then $\mathbb{V}_{U}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \tilde{\gamma}), \mathbf{Z})=\mathbb{V}_{U}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}), \mathbf{Z})$.

This is the main theoretical result in the paper. It implies that if cluster level explanatory variables are randomly allocated to clusters, there is no need to consider covariance structures beyond those that allow for cluster level correlations. In our application, if the covariate (state minimum wage exceeding federal minimum wage) were as good as randomly allocated to states, then there is no need to incorporate division or puma level correlations in the specification of the covariance matrix. It is in that case sufficient to allow for correlations between outcomes for individuals in the same state. Formally the result is limited to the case with equal sized clusters. There are few exact results for the case with variation in cluster size, although if the variation is modest, one might expect the current results to provide some guidance.

In many econometric analyses researchers specify the conditional distribution of the outcome given
some explanatory variables, and ignore the joint distribution of the explanatory variables. The result in Theorem 1 shows that it may be useful to pay attention to this distribution. Depending on the joint distribution of the explanatory variables, the analyses may be robust to mis-specification of particular aspects of the conditional distribution. In the next section we discuss some methods for assessing the relevance of this result.

### 1.7 Spatial Correlation in State Averages

The results in the previous sections imply that inference is substantially simpler if the explanatory variable of interest is randomly assigned, either at the unit or cluster level. Here we discuss tests originally introduced by Mantel (1967) (see, e.g., Schabenberger and Gotway, 2004) to analyze whether random assignment is consistent with the data, against the alternative hypothesis of some spatial correlation. These tests allow for the calculation of exact, finite sample, p-values. To implement these tests we use the location of the units. To make the discussion more specific, we test the random assignment of state-level variables against the alternative of spatial correlation.

Let $Y_{s}$ be the variable of interest for state $s$, for $s=1, \ldots, S$, where state $s$ has location $Z_{s}$ ( the centroid of the state). In the illustrations of the tests we use an indicator for a state-level regulation, and the state-average of an individual-level outcome. The null hypothesis of no spatial correlation in the $Y_{S}$ can be formalized as stating that conditional on the locations $\mathbf{Z}$, each permutation of the values $\left(Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{S}\right)$ is equally likely. With $S$ states, there are $S!$ permutations. We assess the null hypothesis by comparing, for a given statistic $M(\mathbf{Y}, \mathbf{Z})$, the value of the statistic given the actual $\mathbf{Y}$ and $\mathbf{Z}$, with the distribution of the statistic generated by randomly permuting the $\mathbf{Y}$ vector.

The tests we focus on in the current paper are based on Mantel statistics (e.g., Mantel, 1967; Schabenberger and Gotway, 2004). These general form of the statistics we use is Geary's c (also known as a Black-White or BW statistic in the case of binary outcomes), a proximity-weighted average of squared
pairwise differences:

$$
\begin{equation*}
G(\mathbf{Y}, \mathbf{Z})=\sum_{s=1}^{S-1} \sum_{t=s+1}^{S}\left(Y_{s}-Y_{t}\right)^{2} \cdot d_{s t}, \tag{1.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $d_{s t}=d\left(Z_{s}, Z_{t}\right)$ is a non-negative weight monotonically related to the proximity of the states $s$ and $t$. Given a statistic, we test the null hypothesis of no spatial correlation by comparing the value of the statistic in the actual data set, $G^{\text {obs }}$, to the distribution of the statistic under random permutations of the $Y_{s}$. The latter distribution is defined as follows. Taking the $S$ units, with values for the variable $Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{S}$, we randomly permute the values $Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{S}$ over the $S$ units. For each of the $S$ ! permutations $g$ we re-calculate the Mantel statistic, say $G_{g}$. This defines a discrete distribution with $S!$ different values, one for each allocation. The one-sided exact p -value is defined as the fraction of allocations $g$ (out of the set of $S$ ! allocations) such that the associated Mantel statistic $G_{g}$ is less than or equal to the observed Mantel statistic $G^{\text {obs }}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
p=\frac{1}{S!} \sum_{g=1}^{S!} \mathbf{1}_{G^{\mathrm{obs}} \geq G_{g}} . \tag{1.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

A low value of the p-value suggests rejecting the null hypothesis of no spatial correlation in the variable of interest. In practice the number of allocations is often too large to calculate the exact p-value and so we approximate the p-value by drawing a large number of allocations, and calculating the proportion of statistics less than or equal to the observed Mantel statistic. In the calculations below we use $10,000,000$ draws from the randomization distribution.

We use six different measures of proximity. First, we define the proximity $d_{s t}$ as states $s$ and $t$ sharing a border:

$$
d_{s t}^{B}= \begin{cases}1 & \text { if } s, t \text { share a border }  \tag{1.18}\\ 0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Second, we define $d_{s t}$ as an indicator for states $s$ and $t$ belonging to the same census division of states (recall that the US is divided into 9 divisions):

$$
d_{s t}^{D}= \begin{cases}1 & \text { if } D_{s}=D_{t}  \tag{1.19}\\ 0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

The last four proximity measures are functions of the geographical distance between states $s$ and
$t:$

$$
\begin{equation*}
d_{s t}^{G D}=-d\left(Z_{s}, Z_{t}\right), \quad \text { and } d_{s t}^{\alpha}=\exp \left(-\alpha \cdot d\left(Z_{s}, Z_{t}\right)\right) \tag{1.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $d\left(z, z^{\prime}\right)$ is the distance in miles between two locations $z$ and $z^{\prime}$, and $Z_{s}$ is the latitude and longitude of state $s$, measured as the latitude and longitude of the centroid for each state. We use $\alpha=0.00138, \alpha=0.00276$, and $\alpha=0.00693$. For these values the proximity index declines by $50 \%$ at distances of 500, 250, and 100 miles.

We calculate the p-values for the Mantel test statistic based on three variables. First, an indicator for having a state minimum wage higher than the federal minimum wage. This indicator takes on the value 1 in nine out of the forty nine states in our sample, with these nine states mainly concentrated in the North East and the West Coast. Second, we calculate the p-values for the average of the logarithm of yearly earnings. Third, we calculate the p-values for the indicator for NW and ENC states. The results for the three variables and six statistics are presented in Table 1.4. All three variables exhibit considerable spatial correlation. Interestingly the results are fairly sensitive to the measure of proximity. From these limited calculations, it appears that sharing a border is a measure of proximity that is sensitive to the type of spatial correlations in the data.

Table 1.4: $p$-values for Mantel Statistics, based on 10,000,000 draws and one-sided alternatives

| Proximity $\longrightarrow$ | Border | Divison | $-d\left(Z_{s}, Z_{t}\right)$ | $\exp \left(-\alpha \cdot d\left(Z_{s}, Z_{t}\right)\right)$ |  |  |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  |  |  | $\alpha=0.00138$ | $\alpha=0.00276$ | $\alpha=0.00693$ |
| Minimum wage | 0.0002 | 0.0032 | 0.0087 | 0.2674 | 0.0324 | 0.0033 |
| Log wage | 0.0005 | 0.0239 | 0.0692 | 0.0001 | $<0.0001$ | $<0.0001$ |
| Education | $<0.0001$ | 0.0314 | 0.0028 | $<0.0001$ | $<0.0001$ | $<0.0001$ |
| Hours Worked | 0.0055 | 0.8922 | 0.0950 | 0.0243 | 0.0086 | 0.0182 |
|  |  |  |  |  | 0.0217 | 0.0533 |
| Weeks Worked | 0.0018 | 0.5155 | 0.1285 | 0.02717 |  |  |

### 1.8 A Small Simulation Study

We carried out a small simulation study to investigate the relevance of the theoretical results from Section 1.6 In all cases the model was

$$
Y_{i}=\alpha+\beta \cdot W_{i}+\varepsilon_{i},
$$

with $N=2,590,190$ observations to mimic our actual data. In our simulations every state has the same number of individuals, and every puma within a given state has the same number of individuals. We considered three distributions for $W_{i}$. In all cases $W_{i}$ varies only at the state level. In the first case $W_{i}=1$ for individuals in nine randomly chosen states. In the second case $W_{i}=1$ for the the nine minimum wage states. In the third case $W_{i}=1$ for the eleven NE and ENC states. The distribution for $\varepsilon$ is in all cases Normal with mean zero and covariance matrix $\Omega$. The general specification we consider for $\Omega$ is

$$
\Omega_{i j}(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)= \begin{cases}\sigma_{D}^{2}+\sigma_{S}^{2}+\sigma_{P}^{2}+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} & \text { if } i=j \\ \sigma_{D}^{2}+\sigma_{S}^{2}+\sigma_{P}^{2} & \text { if } i \neq j, P_{i}=P_{j} \\ \sigma_{D}^{2}+\sigma_{S}^{2} & \text { if } P_{i} \neq P_{j}, S_{i}=S_{j} \\ \sigma_{D}^{2} & \text { if } S_{i} \neq S_{j}, D_{i}=D_{j}\end{cases}
$$

We look at two different sets of values for $\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{P}^{2}, \sigma_{S}^{2}, \sigma_{D}^{2}\right),(0.9294,0,0.0161,0)$ (only state level correlations) and $(0.8683,0.0056,0.0058,0.0660)$ (puma, state and division level correlations), motivated by estimates in Section 1.3.

Given the data, we consider five methods for estimating the variance of the least squares estimator $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$, and thus for constructing confidence intervals. The first is based on the randomization distribution:

$$
\hat{\mathbb{V}}_{C R}(\mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z})=\frac{M}{M_{0} \cdot M_{1} \cdot(M-2)} \sum_{m=1}^{M} \hat{\varepsilon}_{m}^{2}
$$

where $\hat{\varepsilon}_{m}$ is the average value of the residual $\hat{\varepsilon}_{i}=Y_{i}-\hat{\alpha}_{\text {ols }}-\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }} \cdot W_{i}$ over cluster $m$. The second, third
and fourth variances are model-based:

$$
m \hat{m} v_{M}(\hat{\Omega}(\mathbf{Z}), \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z})=\frac{1}{N^{2} \cdot \bar{W}^{2} \cdot(1-\bar{W})^{2}}(\bar{W}-1)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\iota_{N} & \mathbf{W}
\end{array}\right)^{\prime} \hat{\Omega}(\mathbf{Z})\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\iota_{N} & \mathbf{W}
\end{array}\right)\binom{\bar{W}}{-1},
$$

using different estimates for $\hat{\Omega}(\mathbf{Z})$. First we use an infeasible estimator, namely the true value for $\Omega(\mathbf{Z})$. Second, we specify

$$
\Omega_{i j}(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)= \begin{cases}\sigma_{S}^{2}+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} & \text { if } i=j \\ \sigma_{S}^{2} & \text { if } i \neq j, S_{i}=S_{j}\end{cases}
$$

We estimate $\sigma_{P}^{2}$ and $\sigma_{S}^{2}$ by maximum likelihood and plug that into the expression for the covariance matrix. For the third variance estimator in this set of three variance estimators we specify

$$
\Omega_{i j}(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)= \begin{cases}\sigma_{D}^{2}+\sigma_{S}^{2}+\sigma_{P}^{2}+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} & \text { if } i=j, \\ \sigma_{D}^{2}+\sigma_{S}^{2}+\sigma_{P}^{2} & \text { if } i \neq j, P_{i}=P_{j} \\ \sigma_{D}^{2}+\sigma_{S}^{2} & \text { if } P_{i} \neq P_{j}, S_{i}=S_{j} \\ \sigma_{D}^{2} & \text { if } S_{i} \neq S_{j}, D_{i}=D_{j}\end{cases}
$$

and again use maximum likelihood estimates.

The fifth and last variance estimator allows for more general variance structures within states, but restricts the correlations between individuals in different states to zero. This estimator assumes $\Omega$ is block diagonal, with the blocks defined by states, but does not impose constant correlations within the blocks. The estimator for $\Omega$ takes the form

$$
\hat{\Omega}_{\mathrm{STATA}, i j}(\mathbf{Z})= \begin{cases}\hat{\varepsilon}_{i}^{2} & \text { if } i=j, \\ \hat{\varepsilon}_{i} \cdot \hat{\varepsilon}_{j} & \text { if } i \neq j, S_{i}=S_{j}, \\ 0 & \text { otherwise },\end{cases}
$$

leading to

$$
\hat{\mathbb{V}}_{\text {STATA }}=\frac{1}{N^{2} \cdot \bar{W}^{2}(1-\bar{W})^{2}} \cdot(\bar{W}-1)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\iota_{N} & \mathbf{W}
\end{array}\right)^{\prime} \Omega_{\mathrm{STATA}}(\mathbf{Z})\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\iota_{N} & \mathbf{W}
\end{array}\right)\binom{\bar{W}}{-1} .
$$

This is the variance estimator implemented in STATA.
Table 1.5: Size of $t$-tests (in \%) using different variance estimators (500,000 draws).

| Treatment type <br> Shock type | Random |  | Min. Wage |  | NE/ENC |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | S | $S P D$ | $S$ | SPD | S | $S P D$ |
| $\hat{\mathbb{V}}_{\text {CR }}(\mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z})$ | 5.6 | 5.6 | 5.6 | 16.2 | 5.6 | 26.3 |
| $\hat{\mathbb{V}}_{M}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}), \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z})$ | 5.0 | 5.0 | 5.0 | 5.0 | 5.0 | 5.0 |
| $\hat{\mathbb{V}}_{M}\left(\Omega\left(\hat{\sigma}_{\epsilon}^{2}, \hat{\sigma}_{S}^{2}\right), \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z}\right)$ | 6.1 | 6.1 | 6.1 | 17.1 | 6.1 | 27.2 |
| $\hat{\mathbb{V}}_{M}\left(\Omega\left(\hat{\sigma}_{\epsilon}^{2}, \hat{\sigma}_{P}^{2}, \hat{\sigma}_{S}^{2}, \hat{\sigma}_{D}^{2}\right), \mathbf{W}, \mathbf{Z}\right)$ | 6.1 | 6.5 | 5.7 | 9.0 | 5.4 | 13.8 |
| Stata | 7.6 | 7.6 | 8.5 | 18.5 | 7.7 | 30.4 |

In Table 1.5 we report the actual level of tests of the null hypothesis that $\beta=\beta_{0}$ with a nominal level of $5 \%$. First consider the three columns with random assignment of states to the treatment. In that case all variance estimators lead to tests that perform well, with actual levels between 4.9 and $7.6 \%$. Excluding the STATA variance estimator the actual levels are below $6.4 \%$. The key finding is that even if the correlation pattern involves pumas as well as divisions, variance estimators that ignore the division level correlations do very well.

When we do use the minimum wage states as the treatment group the assignment is no longer completely random. If the correlations are within state, all variance estimators still perform well. However, if there are correlations at the division level, now only the variance estimator using the true variance matrix does well. The estimator that estimates the division level correlations does best among the feasible estimators, but because the data are not informative enough about these correlations to precisely estimate the variance components even this estimator exhibits substantial size distortions. The same pattern, but even stronger, emerges with the $\mathrm{NE} / \mathrm{ENC}$ states as the treatment group.

### 1.9 Conclusion

In empirical studies with individual level outcomes and state level explanatory variables, researchers often calculate standard errors allowing for within-state correlations between individual-level outcomes. In many cases, however, the correlations may extend beyond state boundaries. Here we explore the presence of such correlations, and investigate the implications of their presence for the calculation of standard errors. In theoretical calculations we show that under some conditions, in particular random assignment of regulations, correlations in outcomes between individuals in different states can be ignored. However, state level variables often exhibit considerable spatial correlation, and ignoring out-of-state correlations of the magnitude found in our application may lead to substantial underestimation of standard errors.

In practice we recommend that researchers explicitly explore the spatial correlation structure of both the outcomes as well as the explanatory variables. Statistical tests based on Mantel statistics, with the proximity based on shared borders, or belonging to a common division, are straightforward to calculate and lead to exact p-values. If these test suggest that both outcomes and explanatory variables exhibit substantial spatial correlation, we recommend that one should explicitly account for the spatial correlation by allowing for a more flexible specification than one that only accounts for state level clustering.

## Chapter 2

## Optimal Stratification in Randomized Experiments

### 2.1 Introduction

Experimenters often face the following situation: they are ready to assign treatment to some subset of units in an experimental group, they have a rich amount of information about each unit -from a baseline survey, a pilot, or administrative records- and they would like to ensure that the treatment and control groups are similar with respect to these variables. They can pick one or two variables and stratify on those, making those variables more balanced after randomization, but what about the rest? Furthermore, on which of the variables should they stratify?

Let's take for example state prison administrators who want to test interventions that reduce recidivism. Their goal is to have released inmates complete a successful twelve-month post-release supervision regime ${ }^{1}$. For the experiment, they have drawn a sample of sixty inmates with six months remaining on their sentences, thirty of whom will receive an intervention. Detailed state administrative records have

[^1]been kept for each inmate starting from the point of arrest. At the beginning of the study, researchers have a large set of baseline variables: past criminal record, prison behavior, family history, and education.

With only sixty units in the experiment, complete random assignment may produce treatment and control groups that are not comparable ${ }^{2}$. Researchers in our example have thus decided on a matchedpair randomization; they will put the sixty inmates into thirty pairs, and one of the two people in each pair will be assigned treatment. This paper shows that an optimal way to choose the thirty pairs is to (1) use all available baseline information to predict whether each inmate will successfully complete post-release supervision, (2) rank inmates according to this prediction, and (3) match pairs by assigning the two highest ranked inmates to one pair, the next two highest to the second pair, and so on until the two lowest ranked inmates are assigned to the last pair. This will require data to estimate prediction functions. In this example, the estimation can be done using information from previous inmate cohorts.

This paper considers the gain in efficiency $\|^{3}$ from effective stratification. We show that stratifying, in the case of matched pairs, leads to significant efficiency gains, that gains will be large if baseline variables are good predictors of the outcome of interest, and that it is optimal to stratify on the conditional expectation of the outcome given baseline variables. Simulations show that the gain in efficiency is comparable to having controlled for covariates in the analysis after randomization. That is, given a set of covariates $\mathcal{X}$, matching on predictions based on $\mathcal{X}$ and estimating the difference in means ex-post gives estimators with mean squared error of the same size as performing a complete randomization and controlling for $\mathcal{X}$ with regression ex-post. This paper focuses on the difference in means since this estimate is typically the key finding from a randomized experiment (Angrist and Pischke, 2010). Thus this method is helpful to modern researchers who, according to Angrist and Pischke (2010) "often

[^2]prefer simpler estimators though they might be giving up asymptotic efficiency" (p. 12). This paper keeps the estimator simple and shows how optimal matching can regain lost efficiency via stratification. Simple estimators also aid in the delivery of research findings to policy makers. Dean Karlan offers the following on scaling up interventions:


#### Abstract

How do we make it easy for government to make the right choices? How do we make it easy for N.G.O.s to choose the right thing? ... You can, the fact that you can put up a simple bar chart makes it easy for people to get it. Okay, treatment is here, control is there, I see the impact. The minute you have really fancy econometrics with lots of Greek Letters, you are not making it easy for policy makers to understand and decipher what the lessons are from a research paper. (Karlan, 2013)


The method used here is especially useful when the number of baseline covariates is very large, since the conditional expectation function collapses multi-dimensional covariates onto a single dimension. This gives experimenters a way to use big data (possibly more covariates than the number of experimental units) ex-ante and maintain simple post-experiment inference techniques. It leverages both the large amount of available baseline information and the tools of predictive analysis (Hastie, Tibshirani, and Friedman 2009) that are increasingly being developed in the field of statistical learning to inform experimental design.

Large detailed datasets are becoming increasingly available to experimenters. Beyond the example above, experimenters partnered with private firms may be able to use the firm's administrative records to inform the design of randomized trials. For example, there have been trials to measure the effects of working from home on productivity (Bloom et al., 2013), peer saving habits on contributions to retirement plans (Beshears et al., 2011), and streamlined college application materials on highperforming, low-income student enrollment at selective colleges (Hoxby and Turner, 2013).

Whether the experiment is set at a Chinese travel agency (Bloom et al., 2013), an American manufacturing firm (Beshears et al., 2011), or a non-profit entrance exam association (Hoxby and Turner, 2013), rich information is increasingly available not only for the units in the experiment but also for the population from which these units are drawn and for comparable past populations. In the public sphere, Medicare and Medicaid programs store information on services to participants, and public
school districts keep detailed records of student academic outcomes, teachers, and classrooms. These agencies have recently allowed academic researchers to evaluate programs in cases where lotteries have been used for limited numbers of program spots (Finkelstein et al. 2012, Angrist et al. 2013). It is not implausible that in the future, researchers will be brought in earlier and have input in the design of randomizations explicitly to increase the amount of information gleaned from these program evaluations (e.g. Kane et al., 2013).

The main worry with using many control variables in the analysis after an experiment is that the data generating process will be unknown, and researchers have a variety of ways to add controls. Controls are often tried in many specifications. With a large number of specifications, experimenters may report only those with significant results. A set of controls, $\mathcal{X}$, can be outlined in a pre-analysis plan (Casey et al., 2011). But specification searches can still be done by selectively including or excluding controls not in $\mathcal{X}$. Even within $\mathcal{X}$, linear models can be specified in $\left\{X_{1}, . ., X_{k}\right\},\left\{X_{1}, X_{1}^{2} . ., X_{k}, X_{k}^{2}\right\}$, $\left\{X_{1}, X_{1}^{2}, X_{1} \cdot X_{2}, \ldots, X_{k}^{2}\right\}$, or any other set of linear controls that take the elements of $\mathcal{X}$ as primitive variables. In contrast, the method in this paper suggests a unique set of controls, the set of pair indicators. While an analysis can include other additional controls, perhaps as robustness checks $\sqrt[4]{4}$, a report of the difference in means with standard errors of correct size will be expected and our set of controls provide exactly that for the difference in means estimator.

Another worry is that researchers will look for treatment effects across many outcomes. Optimizing the randomization with respect to one outcome allows researchers to credibly signal the outcome of interest prior to the experimen ${ }^{5}$. If there is interest in a variety of related outcomes then researchers could designate a broad index as the main outcome of the experiment (e.g. Ludwig et al., 2012).

The next section formalizes the main result. Section 3 describes how the method can be used in practice. Section 4 will go over the ex-post analysis and show how standard methods apply. Section 5 will review model selection methods used in prediction and how they have been used here. To

[^3]demonstrate those methods, section 6 revisits a set of field-experiment based simulations by Bruhn and McKenzie (2011) and shows how experimenters could have used information available at baseline to estimate conditional expectation functions of outcomes given baseline covariates. Section 7 turns to the literature and compares this method to others.

### 2.2 Main Result

## Set-up

We first lay out the primitives of the experiment. The subjects in the experiment are sampled from an underlying population. For each subject, we observe a vector of covariates before the experiment is conducted. After the experiment we observe a real valued outcome. The outcome we observe will depend on whether or not the individual was treated. We can think of each individual having a pair of potential outcomes that correspond to the two different exposures to treatment. We refer to exposure to treatment as treatment, and withholding of the treatment or exposure to a placebo as control. This set of primitives is commonly referred to as Rubin's causal model. Within this framework we are interested in the average causal effect of treatment on the outcome.

A key condition will be that, for every individual, treatment assignment is independent of potential outcomes. Pairing experimental units will not change this independence. What pairing changes is the correlation of treatment across individuals. More explicitly, it makes treatment assignment perfectly negatively correlated between pairs. Across pairs treatment assignment remains independent.

Throughout we will consider the following setup.

## Assumption 1

1. Sampling from a population: We randomly sample $N$ units $i=1, \ldots, N$, where $N$ is even, from some population. Units of observation are characterized by a vector of covariates $X_{i} \in \mathbb{R}^{K}$ as well as a potential outcome function $Y_{i}(\cdot):\{0,1\} \mapsto \mathbb{R}$. At this point only the covariate column vector $X_{i}$ is observed.
2. Treatment assignment: We assign treatment $T_{i}$ to unit $i$ as a function of the matrix of covariates $X=\left(X_{i}^{\prime}, \ldots, X_{N}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime} . \operatorname{Let}\left\{Y_{i}(1), Y_{i}(0)\right\} \Perp T_{j} \mid X \forall i, j$.
3. Realization of outcomes: The observed outcome is the potential outcome corresponding to the assigned treatment level: $Y_{i}=Y_{i}\left(T_{i}\right)$

Note that the second part of Assumption 1.2 encompasses SUTVA, the "stable unit treatment value assumption", (Angrist et al., 1996)). SUTVA states that given individual treatment assignment, potential outcomes are independent of other treatment assignments. More formally $\theta_{i} \Perp T \backslash T_{i}$.

## Treatment Effects, Average Treatment Effect (ATE), and Prognostic Score

Our parameter of interest, or target, is the population average causal effect of treatment. Note that in drawing notation for this parameter we are implicitly assuming this population moment exists. Individual causal (treatment) effects are defined as differences in individuals' potential outcomes. These, of course, are unobservable since only one potential outcome per individual is ever observed.

We can form expectations for each potential outcome conditional on the observed covariates. At the introduction of a new treatment there exists information about how outcomes evolve absent the treatment. This is formalized by the prognostic score, i.e. the conditional expectation of the outcome in the absence of treatment. The prognostic score tells us what is expected, or predicted, to happen in a world where treatment does not yet exist. Errors from these predictions encompass unobserved determinants of the outcome.

## Definition 1

1. Denote the average treatment effect (ATE) $\theta \equiv E\left(Y_{i}(1)-Y_{i}(0)\right)$.
2. For unit $i$ denote the treatment effect $\theta_{i} \equiv Y_{i}(1)-Y_{i}(0), i=1, \ldots, N$.
3. Denote the sample average treatment effect (SATE) $\theta_{S A T E} \equiv \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \theta_{i}$.
4. Denote the prognostic score $r\left(X_{i}\right) \equiv E\left(Y_{i}(0) \mid X_{i}\right)$ and let $\epsilon_{i} \equiv Y_{i}(0)-r\left(X_{i}\right)$.

Now we can describe the relationships between potential outcomes, treatment, prognostic score, and prediction error. The potential outcome, absent treatment, is the sum of the prognostic score and prediction error. The addition of a treatment effect gives the potential outcome under exposure to treatment. The observed outcome is given by the sum of prognosis, prediction error, and, if treated, treatment effect. More formally, Definition 1 gives us that

$$
\begin{aligned}
Y_{i}(0) & =r\left(X_{i}\right)+\epsilon_{i} \\
Y_{i}(1) & =\theta_{i}+r\left(X_{i}\right)+\epsilon_{i} \\
Y_{i} & =T_{i} \theta_{i}+r\left(X_{i}\right)+\epsilon_{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

## Re-indexing and matched pairs

The paired nature of the experimental units makes it useful for reorder their index $i$ so that units in the same pair are adjacent to each other. This will allow us to discuss a particular pair by referring to the individuals' index. Here we do this so that the $k$ th pair is units $2 k-1$ and $2 k$. This also allows us to parsimoniously describe treatment assignments.

Let the index $i$ be re-ordered in a matched pairs randomization scheme where $T_{i}=1-T_{i+1}$ for $i$ odd, and $T_{i} \sim$ iid $\operatorname{Bernoulli}(1 / 2)$ for $i$ odd.

With units and treatment assignments as described above we can establish notation for within pair differences. The average of within pair differences is the difference of averages between treatment and control units, our statistic of interest.

## Definition 2 (Estimator and within pair differences)

1. Denote the within pair differences

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \quad D_{k}=T_{2 k-1}\left[Y_{2 k-1}(1)-Y_{2 k}(0)\right]+\left(1-T_{2 k-1}\right)\left[Y_{2 k}(1)-Y_{2 k-1}(0)\right] \\
& \text { for } k=1, \ldots, \frac{N}{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

2. Denote the sample average $\bar{D} \equiv \frac{2}{N} \sum_{k=1}^{\frac{N}{2}} D_{k}$.

Proposition 1 Unbiasedness: Given Assumption 1 and taking expectations over the distribution of treatment assignments, then $\bar{D}$ is an unbiased estimator of the sample average treatment effect, $\theta_{\text {SATE }}$.
proof: Given assumption 1 and definitions 1 and 2, by iterated expectations

$$
\begin{aligned}
E\left(D_{k} \mid Y(1), Y(0)\right) & =E\left(D_{k} \mid Y_{i}(1), Y_{i}(0)\right) \\
& =\frac{1}{2}\left[Y_{2 k-1}(1)+Y_{2 k}(1)-Y_{2 k-1}(0)-Y_{2 k}(0)\right] \\
& =\frac{1}{2}\left[\theta_{2 k-1}+\theta_{2 k}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

By definition 2

$$
\begin{aligned}
E[\bar{D} \mid Y(1), Y(0)] & =\frac{2}{N} \sum_{k=1}^{\frac{N}{2}} \frac{1}{2}\left[\theta_{2 k-1}+\theta_{2 k}\right] \\
& =\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \theta_{i} \\
& =\theta_{\text {SATE }}
\end{aligned}
$$

Corollary 1 It follows, by taking expectations over the distribution of $X$ described in Assumption 1.1, that $\bar{D}$ is an unbiased estimator of the average treatment effect. It further follows, by taking expectations over the conditional distribution of potential outcomes holding covariates fixed, that $\bar{D}$ is an unbiased estimator of the conditional average treatment effect, $\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} E\left[Y_{i}(1)-Y_{i}(0) \mid X\right]$.

Now we can evaluate the variance of this statistic as follows.

By Definition 2 we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{var}(\bar{D} \mid X)=\left(\frac{2}{N}\right)^{2}\left[\sum_{k=1}^{\frac{N}{2}} \operatorname{var}\left(D_{k} \mid X\right)+\sum_{h \neq k} \operatorname{cov}\left(D_{k}, D_{h} \mid X\right)\right] \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next, we find expressions for each component of the sum in equation 2.1

Proposition 2: If Assumption 1 holds, $\theta_{i} \mid X, \epsilon$ are independent, and $E\left(\theta_{i} \mid X, \epsilon\right)=\theta$ then

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{var}\left(D_{k} \mid X\right) & =\frac{1}{2}\left[\operatorname{var}\left(\theta_{2 k-1} \mid X\right)+\operatorname{var}\left(\theta_{2 k} \mid X\right)\right]  \tag{2.2}\\
& +\operatorname{var}\left(\epsilon_{2 k-1} \mid X\right)+\operatorname{var}\left(\epsilon_{2 k} \mid X\right) \\
& +\left[r\left(X_{2 k-1}\right)-r\left(X_{2 k}\right)\right]^{2}, \quad \forall k,
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{cov}\left(D_{k}, D_{h} \mid X\right)=0, \quad \forall h \neq k . \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

These give

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\operatorname{var}(\bar{D} \mid X)}{\left(\frac{2}{N}\right)^{2}}=\sum_{i=1}^{N}\left[\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{var}\left(\theta_{i} \mid X\right)+\operatorname{var}\left(\epsilon_{i} \mid X\right)\right]+\sum_{k=1}^{\frac{N}{2}}\left(r\left(X_{2 k-1}\right)-r\left(X_{2 k}\right)\right)^{2} \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

proof: Given in Appendix.

The main result is that of all possible ways to pick pairs the optimal way depends on covariates only through their prediction. First we need to formally define a pairing and relate it to our potential outcome notation.

## Definition 3 (Pairing)

For $N$ even, a pairing, $p$, is a permutation of the set $\{1, \ldots, N\}$. The pairs defined by $p$ are $\{\{p(2 k-$ 1), $p(2 k)\}\}_{k=1}^{\frac{N}{2}}$. Two pairings, $p$ and $p^{\prime}$, are different if and only if there exist $k$ and $h$ s.t. $\{p(2 k-$ 1), $p(2 k)\} \cap\left\{p^{\prime}(2 h-1), p^{\prime}(2 h)\right\} \neq \emptyset$, and $\{p(2 k-1), p(2 k)\} \neq\left\{p^{\prime}(2 h-1), p^{\prime}(2 h)\right\}$.

This definition gives an equivalence relation on the set of permutations, i.e. two pairings are equivalent if at least one experimental unit assigned differently between pairings. The set of equivalence classes produced by this relation is what we call the set of pairings. Our goal is to find the pairing that minimizes equation 2.1 .

Proposition 3: Let $r_{i} \equiv r\left(X_{i}\right) \forall i$, and let $r_{(1)}, r_{(2)}, \ldots, r_{(N)}$ denote the order statistics of $r_{1}, r_{2}, \ldots, r_{N}$. If Assumption 1 holds and $\theta_{i} \mid X, \epsilon$ are i.i.d with $E\left(\theta_{i} \mid X, \epsilon\right)=\theta$, then $\operatorname{var}(\bar{D} \mid X)$ is minimized by the pairing $\{(1),(2), \ldots,(N)\}$. This pairing is a permutation of $\{1, \ldots, N\}$. The pairs are $\{(2 k-1),(2 k)\}_{k=1}^{\frac{N}{2}}$.
proof:

By Proposition $1 \operatorname{var}(\bar{D} \mid X)$ depends on pairs only via

$$
\sum_{k=1}^{\frac{N}{2}} r_{(2 k-1)} r_{(2 k)}
$$

So we must show

$$
\sum_{k=1}^{\frac{N}{2}} r_{(2 k-1)} r_{(2 k)} \geq \sum_{k=1}^{\frac{N}{2}} r_{p(2 k-1)} r_{p(2 k)}
$$

for all other pairings $p$.

Suppose for the purposes of deriving a contradiction that $p$ is maximal for

$$
\sum_{k=1}^{\frac{N}{2}} r_{p(2 k-1)} r_{p(2 k)}
$$

and there exists subset $\left\{a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, a_{4}\right\} \subseteq\left\{r_{1}, \ldots, r_{N}\right\}$ where $a_{1} \leq a_{2} \leq a_{3} \leq a_{4}$ and are not paired in order under $p$. If $a_{1}=a_{2}=a_{3}=a_{4}$ then it is not possible to pair the subset out of order. Likewise it is not possible if $a_{1}<a_{2}=a_{3}=a_{4}$ or $a_{1}=a_{2}=a_{3}<a_{4}$. Suppose $a_{1}=a_{2}<a_{3}=a_{4}$, then it must be that under $p$ the pairs are $\left\{a_{1}, a_{3}\right\}$ and $\left\{a_{2}, a_{4}\right\}$. Now consider $a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2} a_{4}$, we will show that $a_{1} a_{2}+a_{3} a_{4}$ is larger and thus $p$ is not maximal. We have $a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2} a_{4}=2 a_{1} a_{3}$ and $a_{1} a_{2}+a_{3} a_{4}=a_{1}^{2}+a_{3}^{2}$. Suppose for contradiction that $a_{1}^{2}+a_{3}^{2} \leq 2 a_{1} a_{3} \Longleftrightarrow a_{1}^{2}+a_{3}^{2}-2 a_{1} a_{3} \leq 0$, but $a_{1}^{2}+a_{3}^{2}-2 a_{1} a_{3}=\left(a_{1}-a_{3}\right)^{2}>0$. Thus it must be that $\left\{a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, a_{4}\right\}$ has at least three distinct elements.

- Case 1: $a_{1}=a_{2}<a_{3}<a_{4}$. Under $p$ the pairs must be $\left\{a_{1}, a_{3}\right\}$ and $\left\{a_{2}, a_{4}\right\}$ since $a_{1}=a_{2}$. Under $p$ we obtain $a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2} a_{4}=a_{1} a_{3}+a_{1} a_{4}$ compared to the alternative pairing $\left\{a_{1}, a_{2}\right\}$ and $\left\{a_{3}, a_{4}\right\}$ where we obtain $a_{1} a_{2}+a_{3} a_{4}=a_{1} a_{1}+a_{3} a_{4}$. Now suppose $a_{1} a_{3}+a_{1} a_{4} \geq a_{1} a_{1}+a_{3} a_{4} \Longleftrightarrow$
$a_{1}\left(a_{3}-a_{1}\right) \geq\left(a_{3}-a_{1}\right) a_{4} \Longleftrightarrow a_{1} \geq a_{4}$ since $a_{3}>a_{1}$. But $a_{1}<a_{4}$ by transitivity.
- Case 2: $a_{1}<a_{2}=a_{3}<a_{4}$. Under $p$ it must be $\left\{a_{1}, a_{4}\right\}$ and $\left\{a_{2}, a_{3}\right\}$ are paired. Under $p$ we obtain $a_{1} a_{4}+a_{2} a_{2}$ whereas under the alternative $\left\{a_{1}, a_{2}\right\}$ and $\left\{a_{3}, a_{4}\right\}$ we obtain $a_{1} a_{2}+a_{2} a_{4}$. Now suppose $a_{1} a_{4}+a_{2} a_{2} \geq a_{1} a_{2}+a_{2} a_{4} \Longleftrightarrow a_{1}\left(a_{4}-a_{2}\right) \geq a_{2}\left(a_{4}-a_{2}\right) \Longleftrightarrow a_{1} \geq a_{2}$, but $a_{1}<a_{2}$.
- Case 3: $a_{1}<a_{2}<a_{3}=a_{4}$. Under $p$ it must be that $\left\{a_{1}, a_{3}\right\}$ and $\left\{a_{2}, a_{4}\right\}$ are paired and we obtain $a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2} a_{3}$. Consider the alternative $\left\{a_{1}, a_{2}\right\}$ and $\left\{a_{3}, a_{4}\right\}$ where we obtain $a_{1} a_{2}+a_{3} a_{3}$. Suppose $a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2} a_{3} \geq a_{1} a_{2}+a_{3} a_{3} \Longleftrightarrow a_{1}\left(a_{3}-a_{2}\right) \geq a_{3}\left(a_{3}-a_{2}\right) \Longleftrightarrow a_{1} \geq a_{3}$, but $a_{3}>a_{1}$.
- Case 4: $a_{1}<a_{2}<a_{3}<a_{4}$. Under $p$ either $a_{1}$ is paired with $a_{3}$ or it is paired with $a_{4}$. First, say $a_{1}$ and $a_{3}$ are paired. Then we obtain $a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2} a_{4}$. Let us compare that to $a_{1} a_{2}+a_{3} a_{4}$. Suppose $a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2} a_{4} \geq a_{1} a_{2}+a_{3} a_{4} \Longleftrightarrow a_{1}\left(a_{3}-a_{2}\right) \geq a_{4}\left(a_{3}-a_{2}\right) \Longleftrightarrow a_{1} \geq a_{4}$ a contradiction. Instead say $a_{1}$ and $a_{4}$ are paired under $p$, then we obtain $a_{1} a_{4}+a_{2} a_{3}$. Let us compare that to $a_{1} a_{2}+a_{3} a_{4}$. Suppose $a_{1} a_{4}+a_{2} a_{3} \geq a_{1} a_{2}+a_{3} a_{4} \Longleftrightarrow a_{1}\left(a_{4}-a_{2}\right) \geq a_{3}\left(a_{4}-a_{2}\right) \Longleftrightarrow a_{1} \geq$ $a_{3}$, a contradiction.

Remarks Use empirical process notation: $\mathbb{E}_{n}\left[f\left(\omega_{i}\right)\right] \equiv \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} f\left(\omega_{i}\right)$. Proposition 2 gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{N}{2} \operatorname{var}(\bar{D} \mid X)=\mathbb{E}_{N}\left[\operatorname{var}\left(\theta_{i} \mid X\right)\right]+2 \mathbb{E}_{N}\left[\operatorname{var}\left(\epsilon_{i} \mid X\right)\right]+\mathbb{E}_{\frac{N}{2}}\left[\left(r\left(X_{2 k-1}\right)-r\left(X_{2 k}\right)\right)^{2}\right] \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the first two terms of this equation are irreducible error, and

$$
\mathbb{E}_{\frac{N}{2}}\left[\left(r\left(X_{2 k-1}\right)-r\left(X_{2 k}\right)\right)^{2}\right]
$$

is the error from within pair differences in $r\left(X_{i}\right)$. If pairs do not match on the vectors $X_{i}$, but all pairs match on the scalars $r\left(X_{i}\right)$ then $\mathbb{E}_{\frac{N}{2}}\left[\left(r\left(X_{2 k-1}\right)-r\left(X_{2 k}\right)\right)^{2}\right]=0$, and equation 2.5 would only involve irreducible error. This provides some intuition for this paper's main results.

Other than Assumption 1 the proof of optimality required that treatment effects be independent of $(X, \epsilon)$. A requirement, like this one, restricting the relationship between the conditional expectations of potential outcomes is necessary for matching based on the prognostic score to be optimal. Consider the following counter example where we do away with this type of requirement and allow $E\left(Y_{i}(1) \mid X_{i}=x\right)$ and $E\left(Y_{i}(0) \mid X_{i}=x\right)$ to be unrestricted. Let potential outcomes be deterministic functions of a univariate $X$, and let $X$ take on the following values in a sample of four. The data could come from four draws from the functions in Figure 2.1 .

Table 2.1: Counter example where treatment effect not independent of $(X, \epsilon)$

| $E\left(Y_{i}(1) \mid x_{i}\right)$ | $E\left(Y(0){ }_{i} \mid x_{i}\right)$ | $x_{i}$ | $i$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 |
| 4 | 2 | 2 | 2 |
| 9 | 3 | 3 | 3 |
| 2 | 4 | 4 | 4 |

The assumptions in Propositions 2 and 3 imply that the average treatment effect conditional on covariates is constant for all values of the potential outcomes. In this counter example, that would require the graphs in Figure 2.1 to differ by at most a vertical shift. In this deviation from that assumption the optimal pairing depends on more than the order given by either conditional expectation function.

Pairing on the prognostic score would pair units $\{1,2\}$ and $\{3,4\}$, and $\operatorname{Var}(\bar{D} \mid X)$ would be $52 / 16$. Pairs matched on the predicted outcome for treatment would give $\{1,4\}$ and $\{2,3\}$ with $\operatorname{Var}(\bar{D} \mid X)$ of 37/16. The optimal pairs in this case are $\{1,3\}$ and $\{2,4\}$, they give $\operatorname{Var}(\bar{D} \mid X)$ of $36 / 16$.

### 2.2.1 General solution to the matching problem

Without making any assumptions we have the following formula for the variance:

Figure 2.1: Counter example where treatment effect not independent of $(X, \epsilon)$


This is derived in a web appendix. The second and third rows depend on the way pairs are matched. Let $E\left(Y_{i}(1) \mid X_{i}\right) \equiv \tilde{r}\left(X_{i}\right)$, and $\epsilon_{i} \equiv Y_{i}(1)-\tilde{r}\left(X_{i}\right)$.

Therefore $\theta_{i}=\tilde{r}\left(X_{i}\right)+\tilde{\epsilon}-r\left(X_{i}\right)-\epsilon_{i}$. We have that $E\left(\theta_{i} Y_{i}(0)\right)=E\left(\tilde{r}\left(X_{i}\right) r\left(X_{i}\right)\right)-E\left(r\left(X_{i}\right)^{2}\right)-E\left(\epsilon_{i}^{2}\right)$, $E\left(\theta_{i} Y_{j}(0)\right)=E\left(\tilde{r}\left(X_{i}\right) r\left(X_{j}\right)\right)-E\left(r\left(X_{i}\right) r\left(X_{j}\right)\right)$, and $E\left(\theta_{i} \theta_{j}\right)=E\left(\tilde{r}\left(X_{i}\right) \tilde{r}\left(X_{j}\right)\right)-E\left(r\left(X_{i}\right) \tilde{r}\left(X_{j}\right)\right)-$
$E\left(\tilde{r}\left(X_{i}\right) r\left(X_{j}\right)\right)+E\left(r\left(X_{i}\right) r\left(X_{j}\right)\right)$. Each of which are functions of $X$. Since the set of possible matches is finite then for every possible realization of $X$ optimization of equation 6 can be done by exhaustive search over this set.

### 2.3 Matching in Practice

In practice the conditional expectation function-also referred to as the 'prognosis score' (Hansen, 2008)-is not known and will have to be estimated with data. This data can come from any sample from the same population, for example a previous experiment, a rich baseline survey, an existing observational study, or administrative data. This initial prediction can be based on many baseline covariates. Since we will be using covariates to predict the outcome of interest, the goal is to use them to make predictions with the best out of sample performance. To this end there are many model selection procedures available, such as, AIC, BIC, Lasso, or ridge regression. This paper provides some guidance on how to estimate the best predictors in the examples and compares their performance.

Figure 2.2 shows each of the steps present in the matching procedure. The process starts with collection of baseline covariates for the units in the experiment, in addition to collection of auxiliary (training) covariates and outcome data from the same population. Next the training data is used to estimate a prediction function. This function, coupled with the baseline covariates from the experiment group form the procedure's predicted outcomes. Matched pairs are based on these predictions. The pair assignments are then operationalized as a set of pair indicators. Next, randomization produces a treatment variable. After the experiment is conducted, an outcome variable is measured. The analysis of this experiment, however, will use just the pair indicators, outcome, and treatment variable.

To build intuition for the procedure and to draw important distinctions, it is useful to compare the present method with well known propensity score methods. In practice, the two steps for optimal matched pairs randomization are analogous to matching procedures in observational studies based on the propensity score (Rubin, 1983). In the first step, rather than estimating a propensity score (which

Figure 2.2: How auxiliary data is used in Matched Pair Randomization


Notes: This figure shows each step in the matching procedure. The process starts with the collection of baseline covariates, $X_{\text {expr }}$, for the units in the experiment and auxiliary (training) data from the same population that contains baseline covariates and outcome, $(X, Y)_{\text {train }}$. Next the training data is used to estimate a prediction function, $\hat{r}$. This allows the experiment baseline covariates to form a predicted outcome. Matched pairs are based on these predictions, $\hat{r}\left(X_{\text {expr }}\right)$. The pair assignments are given by a set of pair indicators, $\mathbf{M}_{\text {expr }}$. Randomization produces a treatment variable $T$, and an outcome variable, $Y$, which is measured after the experiment is conducted. The analysis of the experiment will use $(Y, T, \mathbf{M})_{\text {expr }}$.
is the conditional probability of treatment), we estimate a 'prognostic score' (Hansen, 2008), which is a conditional expectation of the potential outcome absent the treatment. Both scores aggregate the information present in pre-intervention variables. But while the propensity score describes how observables influence selection into treatment, the prognostic score describes how observables influence the outcome.

Since treatment in this model is binary, the propensity score must usually be estimated with probit or logit models as these both account for the binary dependent variable. On the other hand, the prognostic score is not restricted in the same manner unless the outcome is also binary. In propensity score methods the second step would typically involve controlling for the propensity score non-parametrically. This can more generally include matching or blocking, as well as fitting flexible univariate functions. However in matched pairs randomization, the second step is usually fixed $\sqrt{6}$. That is, inference in the second second step is performed in one standard way. We describe this in the next section.

[^4]
### 2.4 Inference in Matched Pair Randomization

After randomization, both frequentist inference and randomization inference depend only on the actual strata chosen and not on estimated predicted values. Covariates are used to form predictions which are then used to choose pairs. Ex-post analysis is done conditionally on the chosen pairs; thus it is unaffected by the process used to pick pairs. However, so long as good predictors of the outcome are used, significant gains in efficiency will most likely be realized.

A standard way to obtain the difference in means estimator is from the following linear regression model (Duflo et al., 2006),

$$
\begin{equation*}
E\left(Y_{i j} \mid T_{i j}, M_{j}\right)=\alpha+\beta T_{i j}+\delta_{j} M_{j} \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $i$ indexes individuals, $j$ indexes pairs, $T_{i j}$ is a treatment indicator, and $M_{j}$ is a pair indicator.

Frequentist inference can be done using either the standard or robust estimates of the least squares variance. In the case of matched pairs, there is also another procedure available, i.e. the paired difference test (Rubin, 1973). The simplest way to think of the paired t-test is to construct within pair differences, $D_{j} \equiv Y_{1 j}-Y_{2 j}$ (indexed so that the first unit is treated). This gives one difference for each pair. The rest of the procedure amounts to estimating the mean with the sample average of the differences, $\bar{D}=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{j} D_{j}$, where $n$ is the number of pairs. Standard errors for the test come from the appropriately normalized sample variances of the differences, $\mathrm{SE}=\sqrt{\frac{1}{n} \frac{1}{n-1} \sum_{j}\left(D_{j}-\bar{D}\right)^{2}}$. At-statistic, $\bar{D} / \mathrm{SE}$, is formed and compared to a critical value from the t -distribution with $n-1$ degrees of freedom. The test can be justified either asymptotically given a central limit theorem holds or in finite samples with the assumption of normal errors.

Thus given a matched pair randomization one can view the data as a set of $N$ outcome measurements from the experimental units, where $N / 2$ have been treated. One can then proceed with analysis by regressing the outcome on a treatment indicator alongside a set of $N / 2$ pair indicators. Alternatively one can view the data as a set of $n=N / 2$ within pair differences wherein the statistician is estimating
the simple mean of the $n$ within pair differences ${ }^{7}$

Randomization inference can also be conducted ex-post. The method, in general, considers a test statistic and a sharp null hypothesis. The test statistic is evaluated at all possible counter-factual assignments that could have been realized by the experiment. A sharp null hypothesis then specifies exactly what the treatment effect is for every experimental unit and allows counter-factual potential outcomes to be computed for every unit. It is commonly the case that the sharp null hypothesizes exactly zero effect of treatment for every unit. Under this null both potential outcomes are identical for each unit, so that outcomes would be the same under any treatment assignment. In a matched pairs experiment with $N / 2$, pairs there would be $2^{N / 2}$ possible assignments and the distribution of a test statistic can be computed over this distribution. Inference would then be conducted by comparing the value of the statistic to the proportion of more extreme values in the underlying distribution.

### 2.4.1 Treatment Compliance

Often in experiments not all treatment assignments are followed. For example experimenters may randomize admission into a work-training program, but not all admitted applicants may enroll. Furthermore, some applicants who were randomized out of the program may be admitted after reapplying. In these cases one can use the original treatment assignments to estimate the effect of Intent To Treat (ITT) by redefining $T_{i}$ in this model's set-up to denote treatment assignment instead of actual treatment.

### 2.5 Model Selection and Prediction Methods

In this section we present and discuss four model selection methods: AIC, the Akaike Information Criterion; BIC, Bayes' Information Criterion; Lasso, the least absolute shrinkage and selection

[^5]operator; and Ridge regression. This paper uses each of these four methods to select models in simulations.

### 2.5.1 AIC and BIC

The Akaike (1974) Information Criterion comes from a correction for over-fitting in a maximum likelihood model. In the likelihood model, this means that the Kullback-Leiber distance between the selected model and the true model is smaller than would be expected. The expected bias is then computed and the estimate is subtracted out. AIC is a transformation of the bias corrected distance between the true model and the given model. On the other hand, the Bayes' Information Criterion (BIC) comes from a Laplace approximation of the probability of observing a given set of data conditional on a particular model. Both AIC and BIC have a long history of application in time series where one of the main questions is regarding how to select the order of AR and ARMA models (c.f. Shibata, 1976 and Brockwell and Davis, 2002). Researchers with access to long panel data sets, such as semester grades from kindergarten to tenth grade, may find AR models useful for predicting class 11 grades. The methods noted above are more generally useful in classifying how well different models fit a dataset.

We use the AIC in the case of independent identically distributed data. This derivation follows Claskens and Hjort (2008). Let $Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}$ be i.i.d. from an unknown density $g$. Consider a parametric model with density $f_{\theta}(y)=f(y, \theta)$ where $\theta=\left(\theta_{1}, \ldots, \theta_{p}\right)^{\prime}$ belongs to some subset of $\mathbb{R}^{p}$. MLE minimizes the Kullback-Leibler distance (KL) between the fitted and true model,

$$
K L=\int g(y) \log g(y) d y-\int g(y) \log f(y, \hat{\theta}) d y
$$

The first term is constant across models $f_{\theta}$ so consider

$$
R_{n}=\int g(y) \log f(y, \hat{\theta}) d y
$$

This is a random variable, dependent on the data via $\hat{\theta}$. Now consider it's expected value

$$
Q_{n}=E_{g}\left[R_{n}\right]=E_{g}\left[\int g(y) \log f(y, \hat{\theta}) d y\right]
$$

and estimate $Q_{n}$ from data via

$$
\hat{Q}_{n}=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log f\left(Y_{i}, \hat{\theta}\right)=\frac{1}{n} l_{n, \max } .
$$

We can show that $\hat{Q}_{n}$ is higher than $Q_{n}$ on average, and the bias is

$$
E\left(\hat{Q}_{n}-Q_{n}\right) \approx p^{*} / n, \quad \text { where } p^{*}=\operatorname{trace}\left(J^{-1} K\right)
$$

where

$$
J=-E_{g}\left[\frac{\partial^{2} \log f\left(Y, \theta_{0}\right)}{\partial \theta \partial \theta^{\prime}}\right], \quad K=\operatorname{Var}_{g}\left[\frac{\partial \log f\left(Y, \theta_{0}\right)}{\partial \theta}\right] .
$$

If $g=f_{\theta_{0}}$ then $J=K$. A bias-corrected estimator of $Q_{n}$ is

$$
\hat{Q}_{n}-p^{*} / n=(1 / n)\left(l_{n, \max }-p^{*}\right) .
$$

When the model actually holds, i.e.

$$
g(y)=f\left(y, \theta_{0}\right),
$$

then $K=J$ is the Fisher information matrix of the model, and

$$
p^{*}=\operatorname{tr}\left(J^{-1} K\right)=p=\operatorname{dim}(\theta) .
$$

If we take $p^{*}=p$, the number of parameters in the model, this gives the AIC criterion

$$
A I C=-2 l_{n, \max }+2 p
$$

In the normal linear model $Y_{i} \mid \mathbf{x}_{\mathbf{i}} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(\mathbf{x}_{\mathbf{i}} \beta, \sigma^{2} I\right)$ we have that $-2 l_{n, \max }=n \log \left(\frac{S S R}{n}\right)$, where $S S R=$ $\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(\hat{y}_{i}-\bar{y}\right)^{2}$ so $A I C=n \log \left(\frac{S S R}{n}\right)+2 p$.

The BIC comes from comparing the posterior probability that a model is the true model. We have that $M_{1}, M_{2}, \ldots$ are potential models. The probability that data come from model $M_{j}$ given the observation
of data, $Y$, is

$$
P\left(M_{j} \mid Y\right)=\frac{P\left(M_{j}\right)}{f(Y)} \int_{\Theta} f\left(Y\left|M_{j}\right| \theta\right) \pi\left(\theta \mid M_{j}\right) d \theta
$$

where $P\left(M_{j}\right)$ is the prior probability that data come from $M_{j}$, and $f(Y)$ is the unconditional likelihood of observing data $Y$. For selecting among models using the same data, $f(Y)$ is fixed. We also give each model equal prior by fixing $P\left(M_{j}\right)$. Now we can rewrite $\int_{\Theta} f\left(Y\left|M_{j}\right| \theta\right) \pi\left(\theta \mid M_{j}\right) d \theta$ as

$$
\int_{\Theta} \exp \left(n \frac{1}{n} l_{n, j}(\theta)\right) \pi(\theta) d \theta
$$

and apply a Laplace transformation to give the approximation

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\frac{2 \pi}{n}\right)^{p / 2} \exp \left(n \frac{1}{n} l_{n, j}(\theta)\right)\left[\pi(\theta)|J(\theta)|^{-1 / 2}\right] \\
& =(2 \pi)^{p / 2} n^{-p / 2} f\left(Y \mid M_{j}\right) \pi(\theta)|J(\theta)|^{-1 / 2}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $p$ is the dimension of the parameters in model $j$. The BIC that we use comes from the first two dominant terms after taking the log of this expression. Taking the log gives

$$
\frac{p}{2} \log (2 \pi)-\frac{p}{2} \log (n)+l_{n, j}(\theta)+\log (\pi(\theta))-\frac{1}{2} \log |J(\theta)|
$$

and the two dominant terms are

$$
-\frac{p}{2} \log (n)+l_{n, j}(\theta)
$$

since they get arbitrarily large with $n$. The BIC for model $j$ is this expression multiplied by -2 .

$$
B I C=p \log (n)-2 l_{n, j}(\theta) .
$$

For the normal linear model we have that

$$
B I C=n \log \left(\frac{S S R}{n}\right)+p \log (n) .
$$

Models are compared with BIC or AIC by taking the set of models under consideration, and then computing AIC and BIC values for each one. Since the penalty term $p \log (n)$ is higher for BIC than for AIC (which has a penalty of $p 2$ ), BIC will have a tendency to select lower dimensional models. As
the number of models grows large, evaluating each model individually becomes burdensome. In the next section we turn to model selection methods that choose models without the need to compute a value for each.

### 2.5.2 Ridge and Lasso

Ridge and Lasso are methods that select from many possible models simultaneously. Here we describe Lasso and Ridge and follow Hastie, Tibshirani, and Friedman (2009). Although more amenable to large parameter spaces (models can be estimated with more covariates than observations), Ridge and Lasso are defined for linear models. Instead of introducing a penalty term after model parameters have been estimated, these shrinkage methods include a penalty within a modified least squares optimization problem. Solving the optimization problem produces the best model.

For comparison recall the OLS estimator

$$
\hat{\beta}=\arg \min _{\beta}(y-x \beta)^{\prime}(y-x \beta)
$$

where $y$ is an $N \times 1$ vector of outcomes, $x$ is a $N \times k$ matrix of covariates that includes a constant in the first column, and $\beta$ is a $k \times 1$ parameter vector. Let us decompose the covariates into the constant and the remaining columns $x=[1, \tilde{x}]$, and let us do the same for the parameters $\beta=\left(\beta_{0}, \tilde{\beta}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$. Now we can write down the ridge estimator as

$$
\arg \min _{\beta}\left[(y-x \beta)^{\prime}(y-x \beta)+\lambda \tilde{\beta}^{\prime} \tilde{\beta}\right]
$$

Instead of minimizing the sum of squared residuals as in OLS, the Ridge estimator is minimizing the sum of squared residuals plus a linear penalty in the sum of the squares of the coefficients. One drawback of this method is that changes in the scale of the inputs have non-trivial effects on the estimand. This paper follows standard practices and normalizes covariates to have mean zero and variance one before we estimate both Ridge and Lasso models.

Ridge can also be reconciled in the following Bayesian model. Let $y_{i} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(x \beta, \sigma^{2}\right)$ i.i.d. for all $i$ and
let $\beta_{j} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, \tau^{2}\right)$ i.i.d. for all $j$. Then the posterior density of $\beta$ with $\sigma$ and $\tau$ known is

$$
f(\beta \mid y, x) \propto \exp \left(-\frac{1}{2 \sigma^{2}}\left[(y-x \beta)^{\prime}(y-x \beta)+\lambda \tilde{\beta}^{\prime} \tilde{\beta}\right]\right)
$$

where $\lambda=\sigma^{2} / \tau^{28}$

Lasso follows a similar optimization to Ridge but changes the penalty so that it is linear in the sum of absolute deviations of the coefficients instead of linear in the sum of the squares like Ridge. More formally the estimator is described by

$$
\arg \min _{\beta}\left[(y-x \beta)^{\prime}(y-x \beta)+\lambda \sum_{j=1}^{k}\left|\beta_{j}\right|\right] .
$$

The effect of changing the penalty on estimated coefficients is substantial. Lasso can produce models with coefficients set to zero. In this way, it can be interpreted as doing subset selection over the set of covariates.

Ridge and Lasso estimates will depend on the magnitude of the penalty coefficient, $\lambda$. Our choice of this parameter starts by estimating models for various values of $\lambda$. For each model we estimate the mean squared error using ten-fold cross validation, then we chose the value $\lambda$ with the lowest estimated mean squared error.

### 2.6 Data and Simulations

### 2.6.1 Dataset descriptions

Using data from Bruhn and McKenzie (2011), I conduct simulations in six cases. In some cases, the data come from actual field experiments. In others, the data is observational and the outcome and baseline variables are chosen to represent a hypothetical field experiment. Data come from four

[^6]sources: Mexico's national labor survey, a Sri Lankan micro-enterprise survey, a Pakistan education survey, and Indonesia's Family Life survey. Table 2.2 gives summary statistics for variables in the six samples.

The Mexican survey has data on monthly incom ${ }^{9}$ and weekly work hours for households surveyed by the Mexican Encuesta Nacional de Empleo (ENE). This was Mexico's national labor survey from 1988 to 2005. The ENE sample we use is for household heads between 20 and 65 who were first interviewed in the second quarter of 2002 and who were reinterviewed in the next four quarters. We keep only those at the initial interview and imagine a treatment aimed at increasing their income.

Sri Lankan data is on small enterprises and measures monthly profits and sales, weekly work hours, capital assets, demographic information on the business owner, and whether the business was affected by the 2004 Indian ocean earthquake and accompanying tsunami. Data collection was done in 2005 by De Mel, McKenzie, and Woodruff (2008), who also randomly assigned grants of 10,000 or 20,000 rupees (LKR) to Sri Lankan micro-enterprises. They surveyed firms with less than 100,000 LKR (US $\$ 1,000$ ) in capital other than land and buildings. We imagine an experiment aimed at increasing firm profits.

The sample of micro-enterprise firms is roughly evenly split between retail sales and manufacturing. Retail firms tend to be small grocery stores. Manufacturing firms range from clothing manufacturing to bicycle repair. The household asset index is the first principal component of a set of indicators or ownership of durable assets $\underbrace{10}$. The Capital variable measures the value of assets in the firm excluding land and buildings.

We run simulations in two cases with data on test scores and child height from Pakistan (Andrabi et al., 2008). Andrabi et al. study teacher value added estimates with three years of data from the Learning and Educational Achievement in Punjab Schools (LEAPS) project, an ongoing survey of

[^7]learning in Pakistan. The sample comes from 112 villages in 3 Punjabi districts. Villages were chosen from the set of villages with at least one private school. Thus the sample has higher income and more education than the average rural village in the districts. The initial panel consisted of 13,735 third graders who were tested in Urdu, math, and English. These children were subsequently tested in fourth and fifth grade. We use a subsample of 6,379 children who were additionally surveyed on anthropometrics (height, weight) and detailed family characteristics. Variables include a family wealth index, an indicator for having a high education mother, and district private school dummies. Math test scores are given as "knowledge scores" which range from zero to 1000 on the LEAPS exam. The variable wealth index is from a principal component analysis of twenty household assets.

The last dataset comes from the Indonesian Family Life Survey (IFLS), an on-going longitudinal survey in Indonesia. The first wave was conducted jointly in 1993 by RAND and Lembaga Demografi, University of Indonesia. We use data from 1997 and 2000, the second and third waves respectively. In one sample we use children in 6th grade during the first survey and simulate a survey that keeps them in school. Our outcome is Child Schooling, an indicator for whether the child was in school in 2000. In the second sample we use household per capita expenditure data as an outcome and simulate a treatment that increases this outcome variable for households. The variable Household expenditure represents the log of household expenditures per capita.

### 2.6.2 Data generating process

In order to allow an arbitrary number of draws to be taken, and so that the true data generating process is known and can be used as a benchmark for each dataset, I first regress the outcome on a set of covariates chosen by Bruhn and McKenzie (2011) Next, I take the estimated coefficients and the mean squared error from this regression in each dataset and treat these estimates as the true parameters, $\left(\beta, \sigma^{2}\right)$ in a normal linear model $y \mid x \sim \mathcal{N}\left(x \beta, \sigma^{2} I\right)$. Tables 2.3 and 2.4 describe the regressions used for the data generating process and present the coefficients and MSE for each dataset. To generate

[^8]observations I draw covariate vectors $x_{i}$ from those that are in the BM samples. That is, I take the joint distribution of $x_{i}, F_{x}$, to be the sample distribution in the BM data.

A simulated experiment draws two independent samples from this distribution, a training sample and an experiment sample. With the experiment sample it estimates prediction functions using the four methods from section 5, AIC, BIC, Ridge, and Lasso.

Ridge uses ridge regression (Tibshirani, 1996) where the penalty term is chosen to minimize the mean squared error under ten-fold cross validation. LASSO uses the least absolute shrinkage and selection operator (Tibshirani, 1996) where the penalty term is chosen to minimize the mean squared error under ten-fold cross validation. AIC uses the model among the $2^{7}$ sub-models that has the lowest value of the Akaike information criterion (Akaike, 1974). BIC uses the model among the $2^{7}$ sub-models that has the lowest value of the Bayes information criterion (Schwarz, 1978). In each of the four methods the full model is linear in a constant and the seven "balancing variables" and corresponds to the data generating process. After this is done the training data is discarded and only the estimated prediction functions are kept. These are used to form predictions of the outcome in the experiment sample.

We investigate how matching pairs according to the predicted outcome performs against complete randomization, and against matching pairs according to the baseline outcome ${ }^{[12}$. We are interested in the lagged outcome because this covariate is highlighted by Bruhn and McKenzie and performs well in their simulations. For matching according to the predicted outcome we compare the four methods of forming predictions from section 5 . Our benchmark estimates draw a training sample of 2000 observations of the outcome and covariates and form predictions for an independent placebo experiment sample of 100 . For each method we report the mean squared error of the difference in means; we form .95 confidence intervals and report the proportion of estimates that fall outside the confidence interval; lastly we estimate rejection probabilities (power) for plausible treatment effects in each experiment.

[^9]Table 2.2: Dataset Summary Statistics

| Variable name | Mean | SD | Variable name | Mean | SD |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Labor income (Mexico, ENE) |  |  | Height z-scores (Pakistan, LEAPS) |  |  |
| Labor income/1000 | 4.33 | 4.93 | Height z -score | -0.28 | 1.17 |
| Baseline income/1000 | 4.56 | 5.4 | Baseline height | -0.162 | 1.21 |
| Hours worked | 48.1 | 14.1 | Baseline weight | -0.581 | 0.991 |
| 1 \{Female\} | 0.13 | 0.337 | Female dummy | 0.443 | 0.498 |
| 1\{Rural \} | 0.27 | 0.445 | Wealth index | -0.0962 | 1.72 |
| Num. rooms in home | 3.83 | 1.5 | 1\{High educ. mother\} | 0.223 | 0.417 |
| 1 Business owner \} | 0.35 | 0.478 | District 1 dummy | 0.303 | 0.46 |
| 1\{1 to 5 employees \} | 0.507 | 0.501 | District 2 dummy | 0.31 | 0.463 |
| Microenterprise profits (Sri Lanka) |  |  | Household expenditures (Indonesia, IFLS) |  |  |
| Microenterprise profits/1000 | 5.77 | 8.22 | Household expenditure | 12.3 | 0.766 |
| Baseline profits/1000 | 3.9 | 3.5 | Urban dummy | 0.48 | 0.5 |
| Hours worked | 52.2 | 22 | Household size | 4.53 | 2.19 |
| Female dummy | 0.477 | 0.5 | 1 MMale h.hold head \} | 0.827 | 0.379 |
| Baseline sales/10000 | 1.18 | 1.53 | Age of h.hold head | 47.7 | 14.9 |
| Capital/10000 | 2.63 | 2.65 | Years educ. h.hold head | 5.29 | 4.3 |
| Asset index | 0.198 | 1.77 | Baseline h.hold expend. | 12.3 | 0.74 |
| Tsunami dummy | 0.26 | 0.439 | Num. of children < 5 | 0.537 | 0.755 |
| Math test scores (Pakistan, LEAPS) |  |  | Child schooling (Indonesia, IFLS) |  |  |
| Math test score | 545 | 171 | Child Schooling | 0.737 | 0.441 |
| Baseline math score | 508 | 155 | Age | 12.4 | 1.16 |
| Baseline english score | 501 | 166 | Female dummy | 0.513 | 0.501 |
| Age | 9.65 | 1.06 | Govt. school dummy | 0.83 | 0.376 |
| Female dummy | 0.487 | 0.501 | Mothers educ. | 4.73 | 4.03 |
| Wealth index | 0.174 | 1.74 | Urban dummy | 0.48 | 0.5 |
| High educ. mother dummy | 0.243 | 0.43 | Household size | 5.5 | 1.62 |
| Private school dummy | 0.313 | 0.465 | Baseline h.hold expenditure | 12.3 | 0.747 |

Notes: This table describes the datasets used in our simulations. Each dataset contains 300 observations. The first row of each panel describes the variable we treat as the outcome in out simulations. The next seven rows describe variables we use as covariates. The models are linear in these covariates.

A second set of simulations investigates how performance changes when we decrease the size of the training sample. Finally two additional sets of simulations investigate the same measures of performance when we first decrease then increase the size of the experimental sample. This is motivated by findings from BM who observe smaller gains from matching with samples sizes of 300 and above.

Table 2.3: DGP Descriptions 1-3

| Labor income (Mexico) |  | Microenterprise (Sri Lanka) |  | Math test (Pakistan) |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Constant | 2213.82 | Constant | 547.00 | Constant | 236.50 |
|  | $(1165.17)$ |  | $(1439.47)$ |  | $(77.29)$ |
| Baseline income | 0.433 | Baseline profits | 0.441 | Baseline math score | 0.581 |
|  | $(0.05)$ |  |  | $(0.06)$ |  |
| Hours worked | 4.65 | Hours worked | 35.6 | Baseline english score | 0.107 |
|  | $(17.23)$ |  | $(21.81)$ |  | $(0.07)$ |
| Female dummy | $-1.15 \mathrm{e}+03$ | Female dummy | -115 | Age | -3.95 |
|  | $(740.63)$ |  | $(959.90)$ |  | $(7.19)$ |
| Rural dummy | $-1.17 \mathrm{e}+03$ | Baseline sales | 0.036 | Female dummy | -32.1 |
|  | $(568.57)$ |  | $(0.03)$ |  | $(15.37)$ |
| Number of rooms in home | 132 | Capital | 0.041 | Wealth index | -0.143 |
|  | $(178.48)$ |  |  | $(0.02)$ |  |
| Business owner dummy | 156 | Asset index | 84.3 | High educ. mother dummy | -5.21 |
|  | $(742.99)$ |  | $(280.87)$ |  | $(17.98)$ |
| 1 to 5 employees dummy | -353 | Tsunami dummy | 749 | Private school dummy | 46.8 |
|  | $(691.98)$ |  | $(1039.68)$ |  | $(19.59)$ |
| F stat | 17.31 | F stat | 5.81 | F stat | 32.19 |
| Ad. $R^{2}$ | 0.280 | Ad. $R^{2}$ | 0.100 | Ad. $R^{2}$ | 0.420 |
| Root MSE | 4190.740 | Root MSE | 7789.430 | Root MSE | 129.700 |

Notes: This table describes the datasets used in our simulations. Each dataset contains 300 observations. Each column in this table describes a regression of that data set's outcome on a constant term and seven covariates. Coefficients are reported with standard errors in parentheses. The coefficients from these regressions and the root mean squared error were used to define part of the data generating process for each simulation. The data generating process is completely described by noting that we use the joint empirical distribution of the covariates to draw observations.

### 2.6.3 Benchmark performance

Table 2.5 shows the relative mean squared error from each method in our benchmark case. In this first set of simulations the size of the training sample is 2000, the size of the experiment sample is 100 , and the number of simulations per dataset per method is 10,000 . We call a training sample of 2000 and an experiment of 100 the benchmark case. The values in Table 2.5 are scaled so that, for each data set, the mean squared error under complete randomization is one. For example, row 1 column 3 implies that the mean squared error using matched pairs and matching using the predicted value from Ridge regression produces mean squared error that is .748 times the size of the mean square error under complete randomization.

Table 2.4: $D G P$ Descriptions 4-6

| Height z-score (Pakistan) |  | Household Exp. (Indonesia) |  | Child Schooling (Indonesia) |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Constant | -0.27 | Constant | 7.88 | Constant | 0.54 |
|  | $(0.11)$ |  | $(0.77)$ |  | $(0.52)$ |
| Baseline height | 0.46 | Urban dummy | -0.006 | Age | -0.055 |
|  | $(0.07)$ |  | $(0.07)$ |  | $(0.02)$ |
| Baseline weight | 0.106 | Household size | 0.004 | Female dummy | 0.021 |
|  | $(0.08)$ |  | $(0.02)$ |  | $(0.05)$ |
| Female dummy | 0.25 | Male household head dummy | -0.214 | Govt. school dummy | 0.138 |
|  | $(0.11)$ |  | $(0.11)$ |  | $(0.06)$ |
| Wealth index | -0.04 | Age of household head | 0.001 | Mothers educ. | 0.025 |
|  | $(0.03)$ |  | $(0.01)$ |  | $(0.01)$ |
| High educ. mother dummy | -0.15 | Years educ. household head | 0.048 | Urban dummy | 0.095 |
|  | $(0.14)$ |  | $(0.01)$ |  | $(0.05)$ |
| District 1 dummy | -0.12 | Baseline h.hold expenditure | 0.356 | Household size | -0.017 |
|  | $(0.14)$ |  | $(0.06)$ |  | $(0.01)$ |
| District 2 dummy | 0.261 | Number of children below 5 | -0.105 | Baseline h.hold expenditure | 0.056 |
|  | $(0.14)$ |  | $(0.06)$ |  | $(0.03)$ |
| F stat | 22.77 | F stat | 16.42 | F stat | 8.34 |
| Ad. $R^{2}$ | 0.340 | Ad. $R^{2}$ | 0.270 | Ad. $R^{2}$ | 0.150 |
| Root MSE | 0.950 | Root MSE | 0.660 | Root MSE | 0.410 |

Notes: This table describes the datasets used in our simulations. Each dataset contains 300 observations. Each column in this table describes a regression of that data set's outcome on a constant term and six covariates. Coefficients are reported with standard errors in parentheses. The coefficients from these regressions and the root mean squared error were used to define part of the data generating process for each simulation. The data generating process is completely described by noting that we use the joint empirical distribution of the covariates to draw observations.

### 2.6.4 Choice of matching variable

Generally in Table 2.5, matching on the predicted values does better than matching the lagged values of the outcomes. In these datasets, matching on the lagged values of the outcome produces mean squared errors that are the about the same size or 2 percent smaller than complete randomization. Note that the biggest improvement comes from dataset 3 and that the least improvement comes from dataset 2. This is in line with the predictive power i.e. $R^{2}$, from the data generating process. The gain in mean squared error relative to complete randomization is $1-R^{2}$ and dataset 3 has the highest $R^{2}$ while dataset 2 has the lowest $R^{2}$.

### 2.6.5 Are standard errors the correct size?

Table 2.6 considers whether tests using the various randomization methods have correct size. This is a first order concern before efficiency gains are considered. That is whether .95 confidence intervals

Table 2.5: Mean Squared Error for Multiple Randomization Methods

| $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=2000, N_{\text {experiment }}=100$ |  | Randomization Method |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | $C R$ | $M P Y_{0}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {Ridge }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {LASSO }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {AIC }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {BIC }}$ | MP $\hat{Y}_{\text {orcl }}$ |
| Labor income (Mexico) | 1.000 | 1.036 | 0.750 | 0.735 | 0.755 | 0.760 | 0.752 |
| Microenterprise profits (Sri Lanka) | 1.000 | 0.985 | 0.871 | 0.891 | 0.851 | 0.850 | 0.840 |
| Math test score (Pakistan) | 1.000 | 1.003 | 0.586 | 0.578 | 0.566 | 0.566 | 0.567 |
| Height z-score (Pakistan) | 1.000 | 1.013 | 0.670 | 0.642 | 0.682 | 0.675 | 0.647 |
| Household expenditures (Indonesia) | 1.000 | 0.998 | 0.711 | 0.732 | 0.747 | 0.776 | 0.720 |
| Child schooling (Indonesia) | 1.000 | 1.001 | 0.833 | 0.823 | 0.821 | 0.835 | 0.830 |

Notes: This table gives mean squared error estimates relative to complete randomization. CR is complete randomization, that is, under no stratification. $M P Y_{0}$ is matching on the lagged value of the outcome in each dataset. The next four columns $M P \hat{Y}_{x}$ match pairs according to the predicted outcome, where the prediction is formed from a training dataset using method $x$. Ridge uses ridge regression (Tibshirani, 1996) where the penalty term is chosen to minimize the mean squared error under ten-fold cross validation. LAS SO uses the least absolute shrinkage and selection operator (Tibshirani,1996) where the penalty term is chosen to minimize the mean squared error under ten-fold cross validation. AIC uses the model among the $2^{7}$ sub-models that has the lowest value of the Akaike information criterion (Akaike, 1974). BIC uses the model among the $2^{7}$ sub-models that has the lowest value of the Bayes information criterion (Schwarz, 1978). In each of the four methods the full model is linear in a constant and the seven "balancing variables" and corresponds to the data generating process. The size of the the training sample used to estimate these predictors is $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=2000$ and the total number of unit in each simulated experiment is $N_{\text {experiment }}=100$.
formed following the linear regression model in equation (1) reject the null of no effect when there is in fact no effect of treatment. Table 2.6 shows that across all methods, size is well controlled. Rejection rates over 10000 simulations stay very close to .05 with the highest deviation to .055 and the lowest to . 046.

Table 2.7 compares the methods under plausible treatment effects. The effects for each method are described in the first column of the table. BM chose these treatment effects to be relatively small in magnitude so that differences can be seen in power across randomization methods.

Table 2.6: Size control for Multiple Randomization Methods

| $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=2000, N_{\text {experiment }}=100$ | Randomization Method |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | $C R$ | $M P Y_{0}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {Ridge }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {LASSO }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {AIC }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {BIC }}$ | MP $\hat{Y}_{\text {orcl }}$ |
| Labor income (Mexico) | 0.047 | 0.054 | 0.048 | 0.050 | 0.049 | 0.048 | 0.048 |
| Microenterprise profits (Sri Lanka) | 0.051 | 0.052 | 0.052 | 0.055 | 0.047 | 0.047 | 0.046 |
| Math test score (Pakistan) | 0.054 | 0.049 | 0.047 | 0.052 | 0.047 | 0.048 | 0.051 |
| Height z-score (Pakistan) | 0.049 | 0.049 | 0.054 | 0.048 | 0.052 | 0.052 | 0.048 |
| Household expenditures (Indonesia) | 0.052 | 0.052 | 0.051 | 0.055 | 0.050 | 0.051 | 0.050 |
| Child schooling (Indonesia) | 0.050 | 0.050 | 0.052 | 0.051 | 0.052 | 0.050 | 0.048 |

Notes: This table gives the rejection rates for .95 significance tests using multiple randomization methods. The randomization methods and sample sizes are described in Table 2.5 .

Table 2.7: Power for Multiple Randomization Methods

| $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=2000, N_{\text {experiment }}=100$ |  |  | Randomization Method |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | TE | $C R$ | $M P Y_{0}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {Ridge }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {LASSO }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {AIC }}$ | MP $\hat{Y}_{\text {BIC }}$ | MP $\hat{Y}_{\text {orcl }}$ |
| Labor income (Mexico) | 0.17 | 0.149 | 0.151 | 0.180 | 0.185 | 0.177 | 0.184 | 0.187 |
| Microenterprise profits (Sri Lanka) | 0.12 | 0.096 | 0.093 | 0.099 | 0.100 | 0.093 | 0.095 | 0.092 |
| Math test score (Pakistan) | 0.22 | 0.196 | 0.200 | 0.295 | 0.311 | 0.302 | 0.304 | 0.308 |
| Height z-score (Pakistan) | 0.25 | 0.250 | 0.243 | 0.345 | 0.330 | 0.338 | 0.334 | 0.350 |
| Household expenditures (Indonesia) | 0.51 | 0.716 | 0.709 | 0.847 | 0.840 | 0.817 | 0.817 | 0.841 |
| Child schooling (Indonesia) | 0.24 | 0.225 | 0.218 | 0.248 | 0.240 | 0.235 | 0.241 | 0.251 |

Notes: This table gives the rejection rates for .95 significance tests, under the treatment effect given under column $T E$, using multiple randomization methods. The treatment effects are presented as standard deviations of the outcome variable. The randomizations methods and sample sizes are described in Table 2.5.

### 2.6.6 Performance with smaller training set

Tables B.1 to B.3 in Appendix C present simulation results that move from the benchmark case and reduce the size of the training set from 2000 to 100. As one would expect we see in Table B.2 that size continues to be controlled well across datasets and randomization methods. Table B.1 shows that the reductions in mean squared error are about the same as in the benchmark case. For Math test scores (Pakistan) matching pairs reduces MSE by forty to forty-three percent with a training sample of 100 . With a training sample of 2000 the Pakistani Math test score simulation produced reductions in MSE of about the same size. Table B. 3 shows that increases in power are about the same as in the benchmark case or slightly smaller. For the Mexican Labor income simulation with a smaller training sample, power under matching based on predicted outcomes gives results between .178 and .183. However in the benchmark case with a training sample of 2000, power is between .186 and .190 .

### 2.6.7 Performance in small experiments

Tables B.4 to B. 6 present simulations that move from the benchmark case and instead reduce the size of the units in the experiment from 100 to 30 . Table B. 4 shows that this does cause a noticeable attenuation of the reductions in MSE relative to the benchmark case. In the benchmark case with the strongest reduction in MSE, i.e. the math test score example with Pakistani data, MSE drops by 40 percent with 30 experimental units. The reduction was .44 percent with Lasso in the benchmark case. Table $\overline{\text { B. }} 8$ shows that tests still correctly reject 5 percent of samples when no treatment effect is present.

By far, the biggest differences from the benchmark case come with respect to losses in the level of power from the reduction of sample size, relative to the benchmark case. The degrees of freedom reduction from the matched pairs method becomes an issue in Table B. 6 . While power remains as high as complete randomization for methods that match on the predicted outcome, for matching on the lagged value of the outcome 4 of 6 datasets show lower power under matching on the lagged value of the outcome.

### 2.6.8 Performance in large experiments

The next case we consider takes the benchmark case and increases the size of the experiment to 300 . Recall that the previous case reduced this sample to 30 . Therefore, between the previous case of 30 , the benchmark case of 100 , and this case of 300 once can observe the performance of randomization methods over a tenfold increase in sample size. Tables B.7 to B. 9 present results on MSE, size control and power. Comparing the relative MSE results in Table B.7 to 2.5 and B.4 we see that the relative reduction in MSE is remarkably stable across sample sizes. Taking for example the intervention on Pakistani math test scores, there remains a forty percent reduction in mean squared error from complete randomization to either one of the four methods that match on the predicted values of the outcome. This performance is remarkably similar to Tables 2.5 and B. 4 .

In similar simulations on math test scores, Bruhn and McKenzie find that the 95th percentile of the difference in means go from 0.23 to 0.17 as the randomization methods goes from complete randomization to matched pairs. They compare this to sample sizes of 30 where the reduction in this statistic is from 0.72 to 0.36 . There are at least three reasons for the discrepancy, (1) the statistic they report is different from the MSE reported here, (2) they match pairs using the Mahalanobis distance as a metric and the Greedy algorithm for selection, (3) each of their simulations uses the same sample of 30 and the same sample of 300 observations in terms of both outcomes and covariates. Each of these three could play a role. It is not obvious that relative percentiles of the distribution should scale proportionately with sample size. Furthermore the 95th percentile of the sampling distribution of the estimator may be a more important statistic than its mean square error. It is less likely that the

Mahalanobis metric would play a significant role in the discrepancy, but how this balances covariates should be studied further. More worrisome is that a single sample of 30 was repeatedly used in the BM simulations. If the balancing variables had more predictive power for that sample than for the remaining sample of 270 that then this could lead to the dramatic differences that BM observes.

### 2.7 Literature

The optimization problem of exhaustively paring subjects from a common pool is called optimal non-bipartite matching (Papadimitriou and Steiglitz, 1998). It has previously been taken up by Greevy et al (2004). The general staring point, if the total number of units is $N$, is an $N \times N$ matrix that holds a weakly positive real valued measure of distance between each subject. Greevy et al (2004) use the Mahalanobis distance (MD) metric suggested by Rubin (1979) in this matrix. Distances are then summed for each candidate set of pairs, and the set with the lowest sum is chosen.

Under MD if $x_{p, 1}$ and $x_{p, 2}$ are the vectors of covariates for the two units of the $p$ th pair, $p=1, \ldots, \frac{N}{2}$, and $\hat{C}$ is an estimate of $\operatorname{Cov}(X)$, then the sum of within pair Mahalanobis distances is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{p=1}^{\frac{N}{2}} \sqrt{\left(x_{p, 1}-x_{p, 2}\right) \hat{C}^{-1}\left(x_{p, 1}-x_{p, 2}\right)^{\prime}} \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

One can set $x_{p, i}$ to the covariates themselves, or to their ranks to minimize the influence of outliers. It is commonly suggested that covariates be normalized by setting means to zero and variances to one. One, benefit of weighting by the inverse covariance matrix is that covariates that are highly correlated will be given less collective weight and covariates that are orthogonal to the rest are given greater weight. This captures the problem of over counting covariates that are very similar. Greevy et al (2012) extends this method to incorporate missing data dummies, and pre and post multiplying $C^{-1}$ by a matrix of user specified weights. The method in this paper uses the conditional expectation function to weigh covariates. Thus missing covariate values do not pose a problem since conditional expectation functions are comparable and can be constructed for any set of covariates. If there were
fewer observed covariates for a particular observation then a conditional expectation function that uses just the non-missing variables as its argument can be estimated. For example, in the extreme case, if one particular experimental unit has no covariate information, then the best prediction of the outcome for this unit is the mean of the outcome.

While the Mahalanobis distance solves a well-posed optimization problem, it leaves much to be desired. Experimenters must choose which variables to include and in what functional form to include them. For example, the number of years of labor market experience can be included, as can the square of experience. Greevy et al (2004) suggest that covariates that matter for the outcome be chosen, but they go no further. If many irrelevant covariates are included in addition to strong predictors then this method will produce less of a gain than if the irrelevant variables were excluded. Matching on the predicted outcome (as is done in this paper) is not immune from the selection of an overly complex model. However, prediction is a richly studied concept in model selection, forecasting, machine learning and computer science, and there are many suggested solutions to resolve the issue of over-fitting. Thus if many irrelevant covariates are included among the set of predictors, those covariates will be given very little weight or excluded completely.

Two very notable contributions to the experimental design literature from within the field of economics are Hahn et al. (2011) and Kasy (2012). Hahn et al's method requires at least two experiments. The first experiment is conducted with complete randomization, and the data from that experiment are used to compute estimates of the conditional variance, $\operatorname{Var}\left(Y_{i}(t) \mid X_{i}=x\right)$, where $t \in\{0,1\}$ is realized treatment, and $Y_{i}(\cdot)$ is a potential outcome function. In principle, conditional variances for untreated potential outcomes could also be estimated in observational data. From these estimates the optimal treatment probabilities (propensity scores) $p(x) \equiv \operatorname{Pr}\left(T_{i}=1 \mid X_{i}=x\right)$ are computed and used in subsequent experiments. In the end inference is done by pooling the data from all the experiments. The optimization minimizes the asymptotic variance of the average treatment effect. Hahn et al. consider the two-step estimator proposed by Hirano, Imbens, and Ridder (2003) and others

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\beta}=\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N}\left(\frac{T_{i} Y_{i}}{\hat{p}\left(X_{i}\right)}-\frac{\left(1-T_{i}\right) Y_{i}}{1-\hat{p}\left(X_{i}\right)}\right) . \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

This estimator achieves the asymptotic variance bound given by Hahn (1998). In a matched pairs design $\hat{p}$ is set to $\frac{1}{2}$ for all values of $X_{i}$. Hahn et al (2011) consider assignment probabilities as a function of each unit's own covariate values, $X_{i}$. This rules out a method like stratification where the treatment assignment vector is a function of the joint set of covariates $X=\left(X_{1}, \ldots, X_{N}\right)^{\prime}$. Their method is an extension of the Neyman allocation formula (Neyman, 1934), where variance is now conditioned on covariates as well as treatment status.

One could possibly reconcile the approach with stratification by using estimates of the conditional variance. Using those estimates, one can compute optimal treatment probabilities as a function of the conditional expectation of the outcome. Then one can stratify based on the conditional expectation where the relative number treated within each stratum is set to match the optimal treatment probability for the average covariate value of the stratum.

Kasy (2012) formalizes the most balanced distribution of relevant characteristics across treatment groups and explicitly describes Bayesian and frequentist inference. The most balanced distribution of covariates is unique with probability 1 if the set of covariates includes at least one continuous covariate. Since randomization in general gives weight to assignments that are not the most balanced, efficiency gains can be had by not randomizing. The formal structure is Bayesian and implies an optimal assignment and best linear estimator. Frequentist inference can be conducted treating conditional potential outcomes as random given covariates and treatment. Frequentist inference, however, requires estimating the conditional variance. Kasy suggests first estimating the residuals $\hat{\epsilon}_{i}=Y_{i}-\hat{f_{i}}$, where $\hat{f}$ is a non-parametric Bayes estimator of the conditional expectation of the outcome. Then these residuals can be used to estimate the conditional variance.

Within the stratification literature there are frequent recommendations on which variables to use. But guidance never goes beyond advocating for variables that are strongly related to the outcome. In particular there is an absence of recommendations on how to trade-off the balance between multiple variables that are either continuous or discrete with a large support. Here are some quotes from recommendations in the literature.

- "Statistical efficiency is greatest when the variables chosen are strongly related to the outcome of interest (Imai et al., 2008)."
- "Matching is most effective if the matching variable is highly correlated with the endpoint. In most cases, the closest correlation is likely to be with the baseline value of the same endpoint, and so this is a natural candidate for matching (Moulton and Hayes, 2009)."
- "The strength of the correlation within matched pairs or strata may be increased by matching on more than one variable, each of which is correlated with the endpoint (Moulton and Hayes, 2009)."
- "This paired or blocked design produced a sizeable increase in information in comparison with the completely randomized design by reducing the noise (experimental error) affecting the estimation of the difference in the treatment means (Mendenhall, 1968)."
- "Blocking on variables related to the outcome is of course more effective in increasing statistical efficiency than blocking on irrelevant variables, and so it pays to choose the variables to block carefully (Imai, King and Stuart, 2008)."
- "Matching should lead to greater comparability of the intervention and control groups, and precision and power should be increased to the extent that the matching factors are correlated with the outcome" (Hayes and Bennett, 2009).

This paper goes further than these suggestions by offering an explicit method for the choice of matching variables.

Matched pair randomization has been studied extensively by statisticians. Mosteller (1947) and Mc Nemar (1949) studied inference with matched pairs where the response was binary. Each proposes a $\chi_{1}^{2}$ test conditional on the number of pairs whose responses do not match and testing the null that the probability of observing $(0,1)$ and $(1,0)$ is the same based on the normal approximation to the binomial distribution.

Cox (1958) showed that in some cases the McNemar test is uniformly most powerful unbiased. Cox used a logistic model. Chase (1968) compares the efficiency loss from pairing on irrelevant $X$ in models with a binary response.

Bruhn and McKenzie (2009), in simulations, find that pair-wise matching and stratification appear to dominate re-randomization. Re-randomization is the practice of constructing criteria for balance, then randomizing over the set of treatment assignments that meet the criteria. For example, Casey et al (2011) use as their criteria no statistically significant differences between treatment and control groups, in tests with size of five percent, on either of two covariates. Ex-post, Bruhn and McKenzie (2009) show that correct analysis can be done by including the covariates in regression analysis.

McKinlay (1977) lays out several limitations of pair matching; in particular, the loss of sample from discarding control units in observational studies where the number of treatment units is smaller than the number of control units or when matches are hard to find. In our set-up neither of these things are possible because the number of control units is fixed at half the experiment sample and no units are discarded. Discarding units from a simple random sample would change the target parameter away from the ATE.

Shipley, Smith and Dramaix (1989) calculate power in clustered and unclustered matched pair experiments. They focus on the t -test of the $n / 2$ differences and give a formula for the power of a test of size $\alpha$. If we let $d_{i}$ be the $i$ th within pair difference for $i=1, \ldots, m$ where there are $m$ total pairs, then $\bar{d}=\sum_{i=1}^{m} d_{i} / m$, and the variance of $\bar{d}$ is estimated as $\sum\left(d_{i}-\bar{d}\right)^{2} / m(m-1)$. Power, the probability of rejecting the null when the true effect size is $\Delta$ is given by $1-\beta$ where $\beta$ comes from

$$
c_{\beta}=\frac{|\Delta| m^{1 / 2}}{\operatorname{SE}(\bar{d})(m+2)^{1 / 2}}-c_{\alpha / 2}
$$

where $c_{x}$ denotes the value cutting off a portion $x$ of the upper tail of the standard normal distribution. They give a similar formula for clustered randomizations where many individuals make up the unit of randomization. Lynn and McCulloch (1992) consider the case where experimenters have conducted a matched pairs randomization but will be ignoring the paired nature of the data in the ex-post analysis. In simulations they find that tests are conservative when ignoring the matching. They also compare
matching against ex-post regression to control for the influence of covariates. They set up a linear model but they consider the case where matching was exact for a set of variables. That is where a subset of covariates are identical within pairs.

### 2.7.1 Extensions to other randomization settings

Use of the prognostic score as a way of aggregating covariate information extends beyond the matchedpair setting. Here I explore two other randomization procedures where the prognostic score is useful and is a better aggregator of information than current standards. First I explore designs for sequential randomization as used in clinical trials and job training program evaluation. Next, I return to nonsequential experiments and discuss re-randomization methods.

Designs for sequential treatment allocation over a span of time, as would occur in clinical trials, have been developed by Efron (1971) and other $\left[^{13]}\right.$. Efron (1971) suggests a biased coin desigr ${ }^{[14]}$. His aim is to balance the size of the treated and control groups within a discrete covariate category ${ }^{15}$. As an example consider four age categories. His method tries to balance the number of treated and control subjects in each category. E.g. if there are more 16 to 25 year olds in the treatment group than in the control group and the next patient is 24 then that patient would be given a .6 probability $\sqrt{16}$ of assignment to the control group and a .4 probability of assignment to the larger treatment group.

Normally, in the biased coin design additional variables require an increase in the number of categories. Using the prognostic score here would be helpful since the number of categories would not increase

[^10]with the number of covariates. Following Efron's example with four age categories, the prognostic score could similarly be split into four categories, cutting at the quartiles of its distribution. Additional variables would change the amount of information represented in the prognostic score but not the four quartiles.

A large number of categories in Efron's sequential design motivated the Big Stick approach of Pocock and Simon (1975). They say, the "main difficulty" with methods like Efron' is the rapid increase in strata as the number of covariates increases. Pocock and Simon's method starts with choosing categories for covariates, like Efron (1971). The method then aggregates variation of covariates across treatment arms, and proceeds to aggregate information across covariates. This requires choices of simple aggregation functions at each stage that throw away covariate information. The prognostic score would be helpful here. If a prognostic score were used as the single covariate, then there would be no need to chose a function for "the total amount of imbalance" in treatment numbers across covariates. In short section 3.2 of Pocock and Simon (1975) would not be needed, and, in the case of two treatment arms, the method would reduce to Efron's biased coin design.

Lock and Rubin (2012) suggests re-randomization and randomization inference in non-sequential trials. The method requires the researcher to designate a measure of covariate balance. They consider the Mahalanobis distance as a re-randomization criterion. A randomization is deemed acceptable whenever the Mahalanobis distance between the treatment and control groups falls below a certain threshold. The method in this paper suggests an alternative distance measure that is more directly related to the outcome of the experiment. We suggest using the predicted difference in average outcomes. The intuition for how the predicted outcome and the Lock and Rubin (2012) procedure are complimentary uses the same intuition as before. The predicted outcome function collapses the covariate space into one dimension, so once can use this single covariate in Lock and Rubin. The Mahalanobis distance with a single covariate is exactly the average difference in the covariate.

### 2.8 Conclusion

This paper discusses how stratification can be done so that the variance of the difference in means is minimized. We show that in a matched pairs setting, the variance of the difference in means is minimized when pairs are chosen according to their predicted outcome. That is the prediction of the outcome as a function of baseline covariates. We show that the optimal predictor is the minimizer of the mean squared error, i.e. the conditional expectation function.

Here we only consider strata that are pairs and where there is exactly one treated unit and one control unit in each pair. The main result is that pairs should be assigned by ranking units according to their predicted outcome. It remains to be seen whether this result holds for larger strata, for situations where there are different numbers of treated and control units, and more than two treatment arms. This method seems fruitful to examine in other settings too. Future research can extend the results here to the more general stratification problem.

Another avenue for further research is to examine alternative optimality criteria. Minimizing the mean squared error of the difference in mean outcomes naturally aligns with forming predictions of the outcome according to the conditional expectation function. Minimizing the mean absolute value of the error might lead to optimal matching based on predictions of the outcome using the conditional median function. Similar optimization problems involving quantiles of the distribution of the difference in means can also be examined. These may lead to a more direct way of increasing power of tests.

The formula derived in Proposition 1 can be used in power calculations; at the point of randomization the experimenter, as we have seen, can estimate the function $r$ and $E\left(\epsilon^{2}\right)$. Since baseline variables $X_{i}$ are also known then one can calculate power treating $r$ as known for various stratifications or other experimental designs.

## Chapter 3

## Course Availability and College

## Enrollment: Evidence from

## administrative data and enrollment

## discontinuities ${ }^{1}$

### 3.1 Introduction

About half of undergraduate education in the United States takes place at two year colleges ${ }^{2}$. These schools have to meet increased demand for courses and for more varied courses under strict fiscal constraints. This paper is one of the first to study the impact of limited course offerings on student
${ }^{1}$ Co-authored with Silvia Robles, and Robert Fairlie
${ }^{2}$ See Boswell (2000) for recent statistics. Bound, Lovenheim, and Turner (2010), Table 1, documents an increase in the proportion of first time students who attend community colleges; from $31 \%$ for 1972 high school graduates to $43 \%$ for 1988 high school graduates.
outcomes in community college $\sqrt[3]{3}$ Recent evidence suggests that two year schools have increasingly moved from vocational education to preparing students for four-year degrees 4 This new mission involves providing lower division courses in a given major and offering foundational liberal arts courses. There has also been a long term rise in the length of time students spend at two year schools. Two year schools, as their main source of funds comes from states, are particularly affected by budget pressures 7 The primary impact of funding changes is on the amount of course offerings. Two-year schools are also becoming increasingly popular, further decreasing the per capita supply of courses.

Are these factors causing an increase in the length of time it takes the typical student to complete the first two years of a four year degree or in the chances of completing these goals at all? We will shed light on this question by examining what happens when students at two year schools are denied course admission. We find that, in general, students successfully find substitute courses.

We form estimates of the effect of course offerings by comparing students who were barely admitted onto courses from wait lists to students who were almost admitted. Enrollment queues are processed by having the first entrant in be the first entrant out. The last person enrolled from the wait list is thus governed by the number of individuals that are either enrolled or ahead on the wait list who withdraw from the course. Detailed administrative records from the online enrollment system of a large college allow us to reconstruct wait list queues. We link these records to transcript data on student course schedules and grades, and to enrollment at other institutions using files from the National Student Clearinghouse.

[^11]Many studies (Grubb 1993, Kane and Rouse 1995, Hilmer 2000, Gill and Leigh 2003, Light and Strayer 2004) have followed the pioneering work of Heineman and Sussna (1977) who reported on the returns to a two year degree relative to dropping out of a four year by using data from a large urban centered community college. The main parameter of interest in this work is the labor market return to initially attending a two year college. Most notable is the work of Rouse (1995) which uses distance to closest community college as an instrument for two year college attendance. A key question concerns heterogenous treatment effects. While two year schools might have a positive effect for students who would have otherwise attainted a high school diploma, two year school may also "divert" students who would otherwise enrolled at a four year college. Observational evidence (Hilmer 2000) suggests that this may be a valid concern. Rouse finds that the causal effect of two year college attendance among students who where "diverted" is two-fold: a small negative effect on number of years of schooling, but no effect on the likelihood of completing a four year degree. Another important strand of the literature examines the effects of community college on displaced adult workers (Leigh and Gill 1997, Jacobson, LaLonde, Sullivan 2005). These studies find that the returns for adults are the same as the returns for younger workers.

These studies examine the return to education for a given amount of schooling. This paper in turn examines whether the supply of education (as measured in available courses) is a factor in the amount of time taken to transfer or complete a degree and the probability of transferring or completing a two year degree. Previous studies that have examined this question have done so at an aggregate level by using, for example, variation in the size of the cohort of graduating high school seniors in an ares 8 . They find that a secular decrease in college completion is caused by what type of school students attend but it is not caused by the student teacher ratio. The aggregate analysis does not allow deeper examination into other mechanisms but they conjecture that "crowding" i.e. queuing and course enrollment constraints may be an important determinant. We used detailed administrative data to examine the effect of this type of "crowding".

[^12]
### 3.2 Institutional Background and Data

Tuition at two-year public/non-profit colleges is mostly a public expenditure ${ }^{9}$. Public schools offer lower than market tuition. $57 \%$ of tuition is paid for with grants. In addition, another twenty-two percent of tuition is paid for using publicly subsidized loans.

Nationally $79 \%$ of community college students expect to earn a BA, $46 \%$ are enrolled full-time, and $75 \%$ work while enrolled 11

Our sample comes from a panel of students who attended De Anza Community College from 2002 to 2007. Regular enrollment at De Anza is 21 thousand full time equivalent students. The number of enrolled students is higher than 21 thousand since many are not enrolled full-time. The college has three hundred full-time and six-hundred part-time unionized faculty. Union rules set a classroom enrollment cap of 40 students, although this rule is sometimes violated. Classrooms are built with this enrollment cap in mind so deviations in enrollment far above 40 are rare. Online classes offered by the school, however, can be on the order of one-hundred students. Full-time tuition, including books and fees, is $\$ 2,075$, larger than the corresponding figure reported for the BPS sample of $\$ 1,26912$. The school is also relatively high performing. It is the second best (of 128 community colleges in California) for transfers to four-year schools. The data contains three main parts. The first is a registration file with course grades, dates of attendance and degrees granted by De Anza. The second piece of data is enrollment information from other colleges and universities from the National Student Clearinghouse (NSC). Last is enrollment logs for all terms from 2002 to 2007. DeAnza operates on a quarter system with three regular terms (winter, spring and fall), but like many other two-year

[^13]schools it also offers courses during a summer term. The enrollment logs contain a record of each registration attempt during a term's registration period. This for example would be a period during the summer for enrollment in Fall courses. An enrollment attempt is identified by student id, time (with precision to the second), a particular section for a course, and an outcome. Outcomes can take on one of four values: enrollment into the section, placement into a wait list for that section, withdraw from the section, or no change.

### 3.2.1 Course Enrollment

The online enrollment process we will examine takes place before the term begins and classes start. It is governed by an automated system. Students are given one of eight enrollment priority designations. Based of these designations they are given a date upon which they are granted access to the registration system. A student searches for a desired section (e.g. MWF 9-10AM) of a desired course (e.g. Econ001 "Principles of Macroeconomics") and is told what instructor is teaching the particular section, where it meets, and how many seats are available. If there are no seats available then the student is told how many students are on the wait list and how many spots are available on the wait list. Wait lists are only allowed to reach 15 students per section. Students are taken from the wait list as currently enrolled students drop the section. When a spot is freed the first wait-listed student is given 48 hours to enroll, if the student does not enroll, then the next student on the wait list is given permission to enroll. After enrolling students have two weeks to pay tuition for the section, if they do not pay within two weeks they are dropped from the section. We limit our analysis to enrollment before the term starts. After the term starts instructors have discretion with respect to who is granted enrollment in a section. This is usually based on wait list position leading up to the start of the term conditional on section attendance, however this process is opaque and data is of much lower quality.

### 3.2.2 Instrument Construction

In our first set of estimates we will use a regression discontinuity design based on a student's position on course wait lists. Here we will describe how we construct the running variable. It is important to note that the method we use accounts for the fact that a substantial number of students exit the wait list before the completion of the registration period. Attrition of this kind would otherwise result in selection at the threshold; those students who barely made it into the class were all students who did not drop themselves from the wait list, but among students who almost made it into the class are students that exited the wait list before the start of the term or before the last admission into the class.

We define $R V_{i}$, distance to the threshold for student $i$, as the number of additional students ahead of the student $i$ who would have needed to drop the class section in order for student $i$ to have successfully enrolled in the class section had student $i$ stayed on the wait list throughout the course of the preregistration period. Let us take a look at a class section and describe the construction of this measure for three students. See Table 3.1. We can think of the distance to the threshold as a hypothetical "last wait list number".

Suppose we are interested in student number 38 and that Table 3.1 gives us the final set of events before the start of the term. In the previous period we can assume that 30 initial students, numbered 1 to 30 , enrolled in this class without incident. Student 38 placed herself on the wait-list at 12:42PM on August 1st. At that time there were 35 students enrolled in the class and an additional 2 students on the wait list. We thus assign student 38 an initial wait list number of 3 . This means that at least three people, of the 37 ahead of her (either enrolled in the class or on the wait list with an earlier entry time), must drop the class before she can successfully enroll. We further see that three students ahead of student 38 did in fact drop the class before the start of the semester. Thus student 38 is assigned a final wait list number of zero.

Take on the other hand student 39. Student 39 is assigned an initial wait list number of 4 . Since three students ahead of student 39 dropped the class, student 39 is assigned a final wait list number of 1 .

Table 3.1: Hypothetical Enrollment Log

| student id | action | date/time |
| :---: | :---: | :--- |
| $\vdots$ | $\vdots$ | $\vdots$ |
| 31 | enroll | 5:01:01 Aug 1, 2004 |
| 32 | enroll | $6: 11: 21$ Aug 1, 2004 |
| 33 | enroll | $7: 21: 41$ Aug 1, 2004 |
| 34 | enroll | $8: 31: 51$ Aug 1, 2004 |
| 35 | enroll | $8: 41: 11$ Aug 1, 2004 |
| 36 | waitlist | $8: 51: 31$ Aug 1, 2004 |
| 37 | waitlist | $9: 02: 02$ Aug 1, 2004 |
| 38 | waitlist | $11: 22: 12$ Aug 1, 2004 |
| 39 | waitlist | $12: 42: 52$ Aug 1, 2004 |
| 40 | waitlist | $13: 32: 22$ Aug 1, 2004 |
| 41 | waitlist | $14: 52: 12$ Aug 1, 2004 |
| 23 | drop | $11: 32: 43$ Aug 14, 2004 |
| 36 | enroll | $11: 45: 32$ Aug 14, 2004 |
| 13 | drop | $2: 42: 21$ Aug 16, 2004 |
| 37 | enroll | $9: 50: 12$ Aug 16, 2004 |
| 7 | drop | $5: 45: 33$ Aug 20, 2004 |
| 38 | enroll | $2: 01: 37$ Aug 21, 2004 |
| 39 | drop | $1: 15: 50$ Aug 24, 2004 |

Had student 39 stayed on the wait list she still would need one additional person to drop the class in order to successfully enroll.

Likewise, student number 40 is also assigned a final wait list number of 1 . Student 40 had an initial wait list number of 5 , and 4 people ahead of her dropped the class before the start of the semester. Thus at the start of the semester student 40 still needed one more person to drop before she could successfully enroll.

Table 3.2 presents demographic information on race by national origin. Column one gives the number of observations of U.S. citizens broken down by race. Column two gives the percentage of each race group among Americans. The racial composition of the group has fewer African-American and Hispanic students than samples of two-year college students from IPEDS and BPS. In the De Anza sample $3.87 \%$ of American students report being African-American, while $10.9 \%$ of students in IPEDS and $14 \%$ of students in the BPS 2004-2009 samples are African-American. Relative to these samples American students at De Anza are slightly less Hispanic. Hispanics make up 13.38\% of U.S. students at De Anza while they comprise $15.7 \%$ and $15.9 \%$ of the IPEDS and BPS samples respectively. Asian Americans make up a plurality ( $42 \%$ ) of U.S. students and a majority ( $65 \%$ ) of international students at De Anza. Whites make up a quarter of American students and $13 \%$ of international students.

Table 3.2: Summary Statistics: Race

|  | U.S. |  | International |  |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
|  | Count | Freq. | Count | Freq. |
| White | 10,604 | 25.11 | 1,334 | 13.94 |
| African-American | 1,636 | 3.87 | 353 | 3.69 |
| Hispanic | 5,652 | 13.38 | 892 | 9.32 |
| Asian | 18,066 | 42.77 | 6,244 | 65.27 |
| Native Am., Pac. Is., Other | 1,226 | 2.9 | 185 | 1.93 |
| Unknown | 5,051 | 11.96 | 559 | 5.84 |
|  |  |  |  |  |
| Total ( $\mathrm{n}=51,802$ ) | 42,235 | 100 | 9,567 | 100 |

Given the substantial differences in racial composition it is worthwhile to compare other summary statistics against the IPEDS and BPS samples. Table 3.3 presents further summary statistics for the De

Anza sample. All three samples are 55\% female. The De Anza sample has a higher mean age than the BPS sample, 25.97 compared to 24.4. A smaller fraction of students at De Anza have financial aid; $18 \%$, relative to $74.9 \%$ reported having applied for aid in the BPS sample. Comparing educational goals, $33 \%$ of students in our sample declared an intent of transferring to a four-year instituiton while $79.9 \%$ of community college students in the BPS say they expect to earn a BA.

Table 3.3: Summary Statistics: Demographics

|  | Mean | Std. Dev. | Min | Max |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| Previous Enrollments | 12.45 | 11.65 | 0 | 86 |
| Cum. Course Hours | 15.12 | 31.35 | 0 | 337 |
| First Term | 0.51 | 0.50 | 0 | 1 |
| Financial Aid | 0.18 | 0.39 | 0 | 1 |
| Female | 0.55 | 0.50 | 0 | 1 |
| Age | 25.97 | 8.53 | 18 | 50 |
| Declared Certificate | 0.03 | 0.18 | 0 | 1 |
| Declared Transfer | 0.33 | 0.47 | 0 | 1 |

### 3.3 Identification and Reduced-Form Evidence

In this section we start by laying out the assumptions in our regression discontinuity analysis, motivate an instrumental variables model, and describe the local average treatment effect that is identified by our instrument. Next, we show that we have a strong first stage in our two stage least squares analysis. We proceed by conducting validity checks to ensure that there are no a priori discontinuities in baseline variables other than section enrollment, and that there is no sorting across wait list position a la McCrary (2008). Last we present reduce form evidence for our main results.

### 3.3.1 Identification

Consider a student who has placed herself on a section wait list. Let $r v$ be her wait list number. Let $Y(1)$ be an educational outcome for her if she is admitted into the section, and let $Y(0)$ be the corresponding educational outcome for her if she is not admitted into the section. Denote the mean
outcome for students with wait list number $r v$ had they all been admitted into their wait listed section as $E(Y(1) \mid R V=r v)$, similarly denote the mean outcome for students with wait-list number $r v$ had they not been admitted into their wait-listed section as $E(Y(1) \mid R V=r v)$. Conditional on having wait list number $r v$ the effect of being admitted into the wait-listed section on the educational outcome is $E(Y(1)-Y(0) \mid R V=r v)$. Our identification strategy will allow us to measure the average effect for students on the cusp of being admitted from the wait-list, for whom $R V=0$. Denote this local average treatment effect, LATE,

$$
\begin{equation*}
L A T E \equiv E(Y(1)-Y(0) \mid R V=0) . \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

We measure this effect by estimating the four following quantities:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\lim _{r v \uparrow 0} E(X \mid R V=r v), & \lim _{r \vee \downarrow 0} E(X \mid R V=r v) \\
\lim _{r \vee \uparrow 0} E(Y \mid R V=r v), & \lim _{r v \downarrow 0} E(Y \mid R V=r v), \tag{3.3}
\end{array}
$$

where $X$ is an observed indicator for whether the student successfully enrolled in the wait-listed section and $Y$ is the observed educational outcome. By definition $Y=Y(1) \Longleftrightarrow X=1$ so by conditional expectation we can write $E(Y \mid R V=r v)=$

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(Y(1) \mid R V=r v) P(X=1 \mid R V=r v)+E(Y(0) \mid R V=r v) P(X=0 \mid R V=r v) . \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Two necessary conditions are that there is a discontinuous jump in the likelihood of enrollment at the threshold, i.e. $\lim _{r v \uparrow 0} E(X \mid R V=r v) \neq \lim _{r v \downarrow 0} E(X \mid R V=r v)$. and that the functions $E(Y(j) \mid R V)$ are continuous at $R V=0$ for $j=1,0$.

Define $p_{\uparrow}^{j} \equiv \lim _{R V \uparrow 0} P(X=j \mid R V)$ and $p_{\downarrow}^{j} \equiv \lim _{R V \downarrow 0} P(X=j \mid R V)$ for $j=1,0 . E(Y(j) \mid R V)$ continous at $R V=0$ implies $\lim _{R V \uparrow 0} E(Y(j) \mid R V)=\lim _{R V \downarrow 0} E(Y(j) \mid R V)=E(Y(j) \mid R V=0)$ for $j=1,0$.

$$
\therefore \lim _{R V \uparrow 0}\{E(Y(j) \mid R V) P(X=j \mid R V)\} \quad=\quad E(Y(j) \mid R V=0) p_{\uparrow}^{j}
$$

and

$$
\lim _{R V \downarrow 0}\{E(Y(j) \mid R V) P(X=j \mid R V)\} \quad=\quad E(Y(j) \mid R V=0) p_{\downarrow}^{j}
$$

for $j=1,0$.

Now consider $\lim _{R V \uparrow 0} E(Y \mid R V)-\lim _{R V \downarrow 0} E(Y \mid R V)$

$$
\begin{gathered}
=E(Y(1) \mid R V=0) p_{\uparrow}^{1}+E(Y(0) \mid R V=0) p_{\uparrow}^{0}-E(Y(1) \mid R V=0) p_{\downarrow}^{1}-E(Y(0) \mid R V=0) p_{\downarrow}^{0} \\
=E(Y(1)-Y(0) \mid R V=0) *\left[p_{\uparrow}^{1}-p_{\downarrow}^{1}\right] \\
=L A T E *\left[p_{\uparrow}^{1}-p_{\downarrow}^{1}\right]
\end{gathered}
$$

In our regression discontinuity design we estimate the following system,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& E(Y \mid R V, Z)=\pi_{0}^{1}+\pi_{1}^{1} Z+g^{1}(R V) \\
& E(X \mid R V, Z)=\pi_{0}^{2}+\pi_{1}^{2} Z+g^{2}(R V)
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
\pi_{1}^{1}=L A T E *\left[p_{\uparrow}^{1}-p_{\downarrow}^{1}\right]
$$

and

$$
\pi_{1}^{2}=p_{\uparrow}^{1}-p_{\downarrow}^{1}
$$

We estimate the following instrumental variables model

$$
\begin{align*}
& E(Y \mid X, Z, W)=X \beta+W^{\prime} \delta .  \tag{3.5}\\
& E(X \mid Z, W)=Z \pi_{12}+W \pi_{22} . \tag{3.6}
\end{align*}
$$

Here $Z$ is an indicator for $R V<1, W$ contains continuous functions of the running variable and demographic variables that are correlated with our set of outcomes, $X$ is an indicator for whether the student successfully enrolled in the wait-listed section, and $Y$ is an outcome variable. The local average treatment effect if denoted $\beta$. The exclusion restriction is that conditional on $W$ and $X$ the best predictor of $Y$ does not include $Z$.

## What is the treatment and what is the local average treatment effect?

The treatment that we measure using the wait list discontinuity is the effect of admitting one additional student into a section holding availability in all other sections fixed. In an ideal experiment that estimates this same parameter only the supply one one section would be reduced. The response to a treatment where a large fraction of sections are eliminated may be very different if reductions in other courses and sections raises the expected costs substitution. A policy change that reduced overall course offerings would decrease the chances of students enrolling in their most preferred sections as well as the changes of enrolling in their second and third choices. The effects on student outcomes of such a change are likely to be substantially different than the effects measured in this paper. In the natural experiment that is the focus of this paper only the chances of enrollment in one section is affected.

The local effect that we measure is for individuals who have placed themselves on the course wait-list who are on the margin of being admitted into the section during the pre-registration period. It is important to note that these students have placed themselves on wait lists where there is a substantial chance of not being admitted into the section. In the next section we will see that around the threshold the chances of not enrolling in the section are between ten and twenty percent. There may a substantial portion of students who choose not to take this chance and who therefore do not place themselves on a wait list. The effect of not enrolling in a section for these more averse students may be substantially different than the effect that we measure in the population of student that place themselves on wait lists.

### 3.3.2 First Stage

Enrollment into a section is not completely determined by whether or not a student was allowed to enroll from the wait list. Therefore our estimation will be based on a fuzzy RD design. Making the wait list cut-off produces a discontinuity in the probability of enrollment into the wait listed section but it does not completely determine enrollment. Figure 3.1 shows a $13.4 \%$ increase in enrollment
associated with crossing the threshold from the right. Students on the right side of the red vertical line in this figure remained on the wait list at the start of the term. The running variable tells us how other students were ahead of them on the wait list ahead at the start of the term. Nonetheless, students that remained on the wait list have a greater than $50 \%$ chance of enrolling in their desired section. This can happen from enrolling in the section after the start of the term. On the left side of the figure we see that a small fraction of students that were admitted into the section did not enroll, or enrolled and later dropped the class.

Figure 3.1: First Stage: Mean Enrollment in Wait-listed Section as a Function of Relative Wait List Position


Table 3.4 presents OLS regressions of the first stage equation. Each column presents results from a local linear regression with a square kernel. The size of the bandwidth differs across the columns. The first column uses a bandwidth of 20 on either side of the cut-off, the second column uses a bandwidth of ten, and the third column uses a bandwidth of five. The coefficient on the instrument gives the increase in probability of enrollment associated with crossing the threshold. We see that even with the smallest bandwidth the coefficient remains at about ten percentage points.

Table 3.4: First Stage OLS Regressions

|  | $(1)$ <br> Enrollment | $(2)$ <br> Enrollment | $(3)$ <br> Enrollment |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Z | $0.118^{* * *}$ | $0.100^{* * *}$ | $0.101 * * *$ |
| RV | $(0.00714)$ | $(0.00810)$ | $(0.0112)$ |
|  | $-0.0113^{* * *}$ | $-0.0138^{* * *}$ | $-0.0129 * * *$ |
| RVZ | $(0.000521)$ | $(0.00113)$ | $(0.00343)$ |
|  | $0.00722^{* * *}$ | $0.00965^{* * *}$ | 0.00285 |
| Constant | $(0.00194)$ | $(0.00220)$ | $(0.00509)$ |
|  | $0.457 * * *$ | $0.467 * * *$ | $0.466 * * *$ |
|  | $(0.00417)$ | $(0.00558)$ | $(0.00892)$ |
| Observations | 51,802 | 41,940 | 27,365 |
| R-squared | 0.038 | 0.028 | 0.020 |
| F | 272.1 | 176.7 | 80.70 |

### 3.3.3 Validity Checks

We conduct two validity checks. First we check for discontinuities in baseline covariates at the threshold, next we check whether there is bunching of the running variable at the threshold. Figures 3.2 and 3.3 plot of the average values of eight covariates conditional on wait list position. Figure 3.2 plots the fraction of each race and the fraction international students along the running variable. The fraction white varies between 19 and $21.5 \%$. The fraction Asian varies between 50 and $58 \%$. While this fraction is decreasing as a function of the running variable it does not change discontinuously at the threshold. The fraction Hispanic varies between 8 and $12 \%$ and is steady around $11 \%$ as it crosses the threshold. The fraction of international students stays between five and nine percent and while there tends to be a higher fraction of international students on the left of the threshold this change is continuous, Figure 3.3 examines mean age, fraction female, fraction of students with a high school degree or less and the average number of credits earned in the sample. While the conditional mean age varies smoothly with a general trend upward from 24 to 24.6 as the running variables goes from -5 to 5 , the fraction female varies downward from around .58 to .54 as the running variable goes from -5 to 5 . Previous educational attainment as measured by the fraction of students with a high school education or less remains steady at around $70 \%$. Cumulative course credits trend downward from an average


Figure 3.2: Smoothness on Covariates: Race and Citizenship Indicators
of 37 to an average of 30 at the threshold and further right. One should note that the discontinuity in enrollment happens between 0 and 1 whereas the jump seem in panel d of Figure 3.3 occurs between -1 and 0 .

### 3.3.4 No Sorting Across Wait List Position

Whereas differences in observable characteristics between individuals on either side of the threshold can be observed by examining the conditional distribution of each observable as it crosses the threshold, a similar examination of unobservable characteristics cannot be done. However, we can examine selection on unobservables due to sorting across the threshold (McCrary, 2008). Figure 3.4 is presented to examine differences in density across the threshold. Differences in density can arise from manipulation of the running variable. It is rarely the case that individuals are indifferent between


Figure 3.3: Smoothness on Covariates: Age, Gender, a priori Education
receiving treatment or not. In our case students would generally prefer to be enrolled in a selected section rather not. If it were possible to manipulate the value of the running variable then there would be incentives to move to lower wait list values. Movement of this type would have higher payoff the closer a student is to crossing the threshold. We would then expect more of this movement to happen for students with positive but small values of the running variable. Movements of this type move mass from the positive side of the threshold to the negative side in the distribution of the running variable. Figure 3.4 shows no evidence of this being the case.

Figure 3.4: No Sorting Across Wait-list position


### 3.3.5 Reduced Form Evidence

Before estimating our model more formally it will be helpful to examine the direct relationship between relative wait list position and important outcomes. Figure 3.5 plots the mean number of courses in which students successfully enrolled during the concurrent term, excluding the section that produced
the wait list position. The figure shows that moving a student below the threshold is associated with a .126 increase in the number of other courses in which the student enrolled the concurrent term. Taken together with a first stage estimate of between .10 and .12 this implies that successfully enrolling in an additional course is associated with taking one fewer of the other courses available. Figure 3.6 shows that a similar sized jump is present when moving over the threshold for the average number of other sections in the same subject. By additivity this implies that the effect of enrolling in fewer classes due to successfully enrolling in another is driven by substitution within classes in the same subject.

Figure 3.5: Enrollment in Other Sections, all subjects, concurrent term


Enrolling in an undesirable section may have implications beyond a change in the number of courses taken. Students may perform better when enrolled in a more desired class or when enrolled in the same class at a more desired time. Figur 3.7 plots the fraction of students who enrolled in school the next term. This figure shows very little in the way of a jump at the point of discontinuity. This leads us to conclude that enrollment in a more desired class does not effect enrollment in school the subsequent term.

Figure 3.6: Enrollment in Other Sections in the same subject, concurrent term


### 3.4 IV Results

Now we turn to estimation of the effects of enrollment on various outcomes. First we examine the effects on course enrollment within De Anza College. We will look at the number of enrolled courses the concurrent quarter and the number of enrolled courses the next quarter. Next we turn to the effects of enrollment on GPA and persistence. We will look at grade points averaged over all courses taken the concurrent semester and the average grade point focusing on courses in the same subject. One might think that enrolling in a more desirable section can lead to better preparation, more consistent attendance, or other factors that would influence academic performance. Last we turn to enrollment and attendance at other colleges. This analysis takes advantage of a match between our registration files from De Anza College and data from the National Student Clearinghouse. Here we test whether enrolling in a more desired course is associated with a higher probability of transferring to a four year college. Alternatively we also test the hypothesis that failing to enroll in a desired course increases the likelihood of seeking resources at another two-year college.

Figure 3.7: Stayed in School, 1 year


### 3.4.1 Course Enrollment

Tables 3.5 and 3.6 present our results for the effect on course enrollment within the same college. Table 3.5 presents local linear two stage least square results using three alternative bandwidth choices. Table 3.6 presents the same set of specifications using the optimal bandwidth selection and robust standard estimation procedure of Cattaneo, Calonico, and Titiunik (2014) (CCT from here on). Our main finding is that there is a robust and significant effect of successful enrollment on substitution away from other courses in the same subject during the concurrent term. Panel A, columns one, two, and three present TSLS estimates of this effect. From column one to column three we vary the bandwidth of our local linear estimator from 20, to 10 , to 5 . We see that our measured coefficient on enrollment increases as we narrow the bandwidth used for estimation. Panel A, column one of Table 3.6 uses the CCT procedure to select optimal bandwidth for the regression. The point estimate given by the procedure is squarely in the middle of the three corresponding estimates presented in Table 3.5. All four estimates are lower than -1. In one case, column 3 panel A of Table 3.5 the estimate is significantly

Table 3.5: TSLS Estimates of Effects on Course Enrollment

|  | Other Courses in Same Subject |  |  | Total Courses in All Subjects |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | (1) | (2) | (3) | (4) | (5) | (6) |
| Panel A: | Concurrent Term |  |  |  |  |  |
| Enrolled | $\begin{gathered} -1.022^{* * *} \\ (0.210) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -1.582 * * * \\ (0.237) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -2.023 * * * \\ (0.311) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \hline 0.294^{*} \\ & (0.179) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.00513 \\ (0.218) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -0.391 \\ & (0.329) \end{aligned}$ |
| RV | $\begin{aligned} & -0.00479 * \\ & (0.00287) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.0214 * * * \\ (0.00420) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.0416 * * * \\ (0.00898) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.0215 * * * \\ (0.00305) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.0344 * * * \\ (0.00553) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.0546 * * * \\ (0.0133) \end{gathered}$ |
| RVZ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0296 * * * \\ (0.00373) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0448 * * * \\ (0.00486) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0695 * * * \\ (0.0118) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0347 * * * \\ (0.00526) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0463 * * * \\ (0.00644) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0582^{* * *} \\ (0.0150) \end{gathered}$ |
| Constant | $\begin{gathered} 1.467 * * * \\ (0.139) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 1.862 * * * \\ (0.159) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 2.178 * * * \\ (0.211) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 2.595 * * * \\ (0.0897) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 2.766^{* * *} \\ (0.114) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 2.981 * * * \\ (0.175) \end{gathered}$ |
| R-squared | 0.293 | 0.226 | 0.065 | 0.000 | 0.004 |  |
| Reduced Form p-val | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0.0990 | 0.981 | 0.230 |
| Panel B: |  |  | Subse | at Term |  |  |
| Enrolled | $\begin{gathered} -0.0149 \\ (0.277) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \hline-0.325 \\ & (0.374) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \hline-0.230 \\ & (0.499) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{gathered} \hline 0.129 \\ (0.297) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} \hline 0.240 \\ (0.367) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} \hline 0.560 \\ (0.538) \end{gathered}$ |
| RV | $\begin{gathered} 0.00113 \\ (0.00523) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -0.0117 \\ & (0.0103) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -0.00161 \\ & (0.0200) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -0.0125^{* *} \\ & (0.00565) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -0.00945 \\ & (0.00942) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 0.00694 \\ & (0.0202) \end{aligned}$ |
| RVZ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0150^{*} \\ (0.00843) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0269 * * \\ (0.0110) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0103 \\ (0.0218) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 0.0158^{* *} \\ & (0.00736) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.0130 \\ (0.00984) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 0.00662 \\ & (0.0215) \end{aligned}$ |
| Constant | $\begin{gathered} 1.519^{* * *} \\ (0.145) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 1.702 * * * \\ (0.204) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 1.636 * * * \\ (0.276) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 2.926 * * * \\ (0.150) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 2.863 * * * \\ (0.191) \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 2.691 * * * \\ (0.284) \end{gathered}$ |
| R-squared | $0.000$ |  |  |  |  |  |
| Reduced Form p-val | $0.957$ | 0.374 | 0.640 | 0.664 | 0.510 | 0.285 |
| Observations | 51,429 | 41,631 | 27,193 | 51,429 | 41,631 | 27,193 |
| Bandwidth(spots) | 20 | $\begin{gathered} 10 \\ * * * \mathrm{p}<0.01, \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 5 \\ k * p<0.05, * \end{gathered}$ | $<0.1{ }^{20}$ | 10 | 5 |

Table 3.6: TSLS Estimates of Effects on Course Enrollment (CCT)

|  | Other Courses, Same Subject <br> (1) | Total Courses, All Subjects <br> (2) |
| :--- | :---: | :---: |
| Panel A: | Concurrent Term |  |

lower than -1 . This might signal a quality/quantity trade-off in courses where students that fail to enroll in a highly desired course substitute with more than one less desired course. Columns four, five and six of panel A in Table 3.5 and column 2 of panel A of Table 3.6 present estimates of the effect of successful enrollment on enrollment in all subjects the concurrent term. Here even though the point estimates for one specification are significant at the 0.10 confidence level we do not see a consistent significant effect on total enrollment.

Panel B of Table 3.5 and panel B of table 3.6 examine the effects of enrollment on course selection the subsequent term. Columns one, two and three of panel B of table 3.5 and column 1 panel B of Table 3.6 examine the effect on taking courses in the same subject the next term. The point estimates in these regressions are each negative but none can rule out a coefficient of zero. Columns four, five and six of panel B of Table 3.5 and column two of panel B of Table 3.6 measure the effect on the total number of courses taken the subsequent school term. These regressions similarly show that there is little indication of inter temporal substitution of courses across school terms.

Table 3.7: TSLS Estimates of Effects on GPA and Persistence (CCT)

|  | $(1)$ | $(2)$ | $(3)$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | GPA <br> overall <br> cur. term | GPA <br> in subj. <br> cur. term | Enrolled <br> 1 yr later |
| RD_Estimate | 0.150 | 0.0696 | -0.174 |
|  | $(0.366)$ | $(0.558)$ | $(0.199)$ |
| Observations | 18,317 | 10,993 | 16,049 |
| Standard errors in parentheses |  |  |  |
| $* * * \mathrm{p}<0.01, * * \mathrm{p}<0.05, * \mathrm{p}<0.1$ |  |  |  |

### 3.4.2 GPA and Persistence

Next we turn to estimates of the effect of enrollment on GPA and persistence. Table 3.7 presents results for three outcome measures. Column one examines the effect of successful enrollment on GPA for the current term ${ }^{[13}$. We see a positive but statistically insignificant coefficient. Column two turns to an estimate of the effect on GPA for classes within the same subject. Again we see a slightly positive but more noisy coefficient estimate. Column three of Table 3.7 presents our estimate of the effect of course enrollment on an indicator for whether the student in seen in the same college one year later. This regression measures a negative but insignificant effect of later school enrollment.

### 3.4.3 Enrollment at 4-year and other 2-year colleges

Last we examine enrollment and attendance at other institutions. We first examine short term outcomes, where we look at where students are one year after the current term, then we look at longer term outcomes where we examine whether we see students at another institution within three years. Column one of Table 3.8 looks at the effect of enrolling in a college the next school term. Our estimate is that an additional successful enrollment into a desired course is associated with a six percentage point

[^14]Table 3.8: TSLS Estimates of Effects on Four-Year College and Two-Year College Enrollment (CCT)

|  | Enrollment at other Colleges |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | $(1)$ | $(2)$ | $(3)$ | $(4)$ |
| 4 yr | other 2 yr | 4 yr | other 2 yr |  |
|  | nxt term | nxt term | nxt 3 yrs | nxt 3 yrs |
| RD_Estimate | 0.0612 | 0.112 | 0.150 | -0.000126 |
|  | $(0.0852)$ | $(0.0795)$ | $(0.156)$ | $(0.139)$ |
| Observations | 16,049 | 16,049 | 16,049 | 16,049 |
|  | Standard errors in parentheses |  |  |  |
|  | $* * * \mathrm{p}<0.01, * * \mathrm{p}<0.05, * \mathrm{p}<0.1$ |  |  |  |

increase in the probability of attending a four year college the next term. However column two shows that successful enrollment is a desired course is associated with an eleven percentage point increase in the probability of attending a different two-year college. Neither of these estimate rule out no effect at all of successful enrollment into a desired course. Columns three and four of Table 3.8 examine longer term measures of these two outcome variables. Column three estimates that successfully enrolling in a course is associated with a fifteen percentage point increase in the probability of attending a four year school within three years. Column four gives a coefficient that indicates a negative effect of enrolling in a different two year school that is one one hundredth of a percentage point. Neither estimates are significantly different from zero. They are suggestive that the long term effect on four year college enrollment may be positive.

### 3.5 Subgroup Analysis and Robustness Checks

This section examines the robustness of our findings and whether there are differential effects by subgroup. The analysis looks at seven variables relating to course loads, gap, persistence and enrollment at other colleges. We make measurements for eleven subgroups based on gender, race, age, citizenship, and whether it is the student?s first term in college. We check the robustness of findings by varying the number of control variables in the locally weighted regressions and by adding richer control
variables. Table C. 1 presents our benchmark subgroup analysis. The regressions in this table estimate the following model

$$
E(Y \mid R V, W)=\alpha+\delta^{\prime} W+Z \cdot \beta+\sum_{j=1}^{3}\left\{\gamma_{j}^{0} R V^{j}+\gamma_{j}^{1} Z \cdot R V^{j}\right\}
$$

Table C. 1 presents estimates of the regression discontinuity estimates using two stage least squares and the method of bandwidth selection developed by CCT(2013a 2013b). The estimates use a third order polynomial to approximate the underlying regression function, the expected outcome conditional on the running variable as a function of the running variable. In the CCT algorithm that selects bandwidth a fourth order polynomial is used to estimate bias due to functional form misspecification. The bandwidth selected using this method is usually between two and three.

Here we look at eleven outcome variables for the overall population and for eleven subgroups. Each entry in the table represents one estimate of the treatment effect for a separate two stage least squares local regression.

It looks like there may be an effect on GPA for males, and an effect on GPA for non-first-time students. There may be effect on whether you stayed in school 1yr for "young" students. There may be an effect on whether you enrolled in a four year college on first time students and on non-foreign students. There also seems to be an effect on whether you enrolled in another 2 year college on foreign students. There may be an effect on whether first-time students enrolled in a four year college the next major academic term. There may be an effect on whether foreign students enrolled in a two year college next term.

$$
E(Y \mid R V, W)=\alpha+\delta^{\prime} W+Z \cdot \beta+\sum_{j=1}^{3}\left\{\gamma_{j}^{0} R V^{j}+\gamma_{j}^{1} Z \cdot R V^{j}\right\}
$$

The regressions in Table C. 2 allow for linear functions of the running variable with different slopes on either side of the threshold. They also control for cumulative course credits earned, cumulative number of courses taken, whether the semester is the student's first, whether the student received financial aid,
gender, and whether the student declared an intention to obtain a vocational certificate or transfer to a four year college. Here we use a rectangular kernel with a bandwidth of five on either side of the threshold.

$$
E(Y \mid R V, W)=\alpha+\delta^{\prime} W+Z \cdot \beta+\gamma^{0} R V+\gamma^{1} Z \cdot R V
$$

The regressions in Table C. 3 allow for linear functions of the running variable with different slopes on either side of the threshold. As before they control for cumulative course credits earned, cumulative number of courses taken, whether the semester is the student's first, whether the student received financial aid, gender, and whether the student declared an intention to obtain a vocational certificate or transfer to a four year college. They also control for race fixed effects, registration priority group fixed effects, term fixed effects and subject fixed effects. Here we use a rectangular kernel with a bandwidth of five on either side of the threshold.

There is a positive effect of taking classes on enrollment in a 4 yr college, the effect exists even with the addition of more extensive controls. It seems that it is driven by females and it is more pronounced for non-foreign students and older students.

The coefficient in the first row in the column titled "enrolled in 4 yr college" is the two stage least squares estimate of the effect of successfully enrolling in a wait listed section on whether the student ever enrolls in a four year college. The estimated effect of 0.203 implies that missing a section is causality associated with a 20 percentage point drop in the likelihood of attending a four year college.

The first column has a coefficient of -1.34 . This means that successfully enrolling in a desired section is associated with taking 1.3 fewer courses in the same subject. Perfect substitution would a coefficient of one and this estimate is not statistically significantly different than one. An estimate smaller than -1 would mean that each section not taken is replaced with more than one other course. This implies a marginal rate of substitution greater than one and implies that wait listed courses are more useful than the courses that replace them.

The regressions in C. 4 allow for linear functions of the running variable with different slopes on either side of the threshold. They also control for cumulative course credits earned, cumulative number of courses taken, whether the semester is the student's first, whether the student received financial aid, gender, and whether the student declared an intention to obtain a vocational certificate or transfer to a four year college. Here we use a rectangular kernel with a bandwidth of three on either side of the threshold.

### 3.6 Conclusions

Course availability at two year colleges is a potentially important factor in the acquisition of human capital. We examined the effect of course availability on later educational outcomes using a novel administrative data set and a regression discontinuity design based on oversubscription to college courses. We find a robust and substantial substitution effect. Specifically we find that successful enrollment into a desired course section is causes students to take fewer courses in that subject the concurrent term. We find some, but limited, evidence that students trade off quality for quantity when they successfully enroll in desired courses. That is, successfully enrolling in a desired course causes students to decrease the number of other courses in the same subject taken concurrently by more than one. Future work may seek to explore these outcomes in other settings or with larger samples. Of particular interest are the labor market outcomes of students who face course scarcity.

## References

Abadie, A., Diamond, A. and Hainmueller, J. (2010). Synthetic control methods for comparative case studies: Estimating the effect of california?s tobacco control program. Journal of the American Statistical Association, 105 (490).

Aickin, M. (2001). Randomization, balance, and the validity and efficiency of design-adaptive allocation methods. Journal of Statistical Planning and Inference, 94 (1), 97-119.

Akaike, H. (1974). A new look at the statistical model identification. Automatic Control, IEEE Transactions on, 19 (6), 716-723.

Altham, P. M. (1971). The analysis of matched proportions. Biometrika, 58 (3), 561-576.
Altman, D. G. (1985). Comparability of randomised groups. The Statistician, pp. 125-136.
Anderson, T. W. and Rubin, H. (1949). Estimation of the parameters of a single equation in a complete system of stochastic equations. The Annals of Mathematical Statistics, 20 (1), 46-63.

Andrabi, T., Das, J., Khwaja, A. I. and Zajonc, T. (2011). Do value-added estimates add value? accounting for learning dynamics. American Economic Journal: Applied Economics, 3 (3), 29-54.

Angrist, J. and Pischke, J.-S. (2010). The credibility revolution in empirical economics: How better research design is taking the con out of econometrics. Tech. rep., National Bureau of Economic Research.

Angrist, J. D., Cohodes, S. R., Dynarski, S. M., Pathak, P. A. and Walters, C. R. (2013). Stand and Deliver: Effects of Boston's Charter High Schools on College Preparation, Entry, and Choice. Tech. rep., National Bureau of Economic Research.
-, Imbens, G. W. and Rubin, D. B. (1996). Identification of causal effects using instrumental variables. Journal of the American statistical Association, 91 (434), 444-455.
— and Pischke, J.-S. (2008). Mostly harmless econometrics: An empiricist's companion. Princeton university press.

Arbia, G. (2006). Spatial econometrics: statistical foundations and applications to regional convergence. Springer.

Atkinson, A. C. (2002). The comparison of designs for sequential clinical trials with covariate information. Journal of the Royal Statistical Society: Series A (Statistics in Society), 165 (2), 349-373.

Barrios, T., Diamond, R., Imbens, G. W. and Kolesar, M. (2012). Clustering, spatial correlations, and randomization inference. Journal of the American Statistical Association, 107 (498), 578-591.

Bertrand, M., Duflo, E. and Mullainathan, S. (2004). How much should we trust differences-indifferences estimates? The Quarterly Journal of Economics, 119 (1), 249-275.

Beshears, J., Choi, J. J., Laibson, D., Madrian, B. C. and Milkman, K. L. (2011). The effect of providing peer information on retirement savings decisions. Tech. rep., National Bureau of Economic Research.

Bester, C. A., Conley, T. G. and Hansen, C. B. (2011). Inference with dependent data using cluster covariance estimators. Journal of Econometrics, 165 (2), 137-151.

Birkett, N. J. (1985). Adaptive allocation in randomized controlled trials. Controlled clinical trials, 6 (2), 146-155.

Вloom, N., Liang, J., Roberts, J. and Ying, Z. J. (2013). Does working from home work? Evidence from a Chinese experiment. Tech. rep., National Bureau of Economic Research.

Boswell, K. (2000). State funding for community colleges: A 50-state survey.
Bound, J., Lovenheim, M. F. and Turner, S. (2010). Why have college completion rates declined? an analysis of changing student preparation and collegiate resources. American economic journal. Applied economics, 2 (3), 129.
—, — and - (2012). Increasing time to baccalaureate degree in the united states. Education, 7 (4), 375-424.

- and Turner, S. (2007). Cohort crowding: How resources affect collegiate attainment. Journal of Public Economics, 91 (5), 877-899.

Box, G. E., Hunter, J. S. and Hunter, W. G. (2005). Statistics for experimenters: design, innovation, and discovery, Hoboken. NJ: Wiley-Interscience.

Brockwell, P. J. and Davis, R. A. (2002). Introduction to time series and forecasting, vol. 1. Taylor \& Francis.

Bruhn, M. and McKenzie, D. (2009). In pursuit of balance: Randomization in practice in development field experiments. American economic journal: applied economics, pp. 200-232.

Calonico, S., Cattaneo, M. D. and Titiunik, R. (2013). Robust nonparametric confidence intervals for regression-discontinuity designs. Revision requested by Econometrica.

Card, D. and Lemieux, T. (2001). Can falling supply explain the rising return to college for younger men? a cohort-based analysis. The Quarterly Journal of Economics, 116 (2), 705-746.

Casey, K., Glennerster, R. and Miguel, E. (2012). Reshaping institutions: Evidence on aid impacts using a preanalysis plan*. The Quarterly Journal of Economics, 127 (4), 1755-1812.

Chaloner, K., Verdinelli, I. et al. (1995). Bayesian experimental design: A review. Statistical Science, 10 (3), 273-304.

Chase, G. (1968). On the efficiency of matched pairs in bernoulli trials. Biometrika, 55 (2), 365-369.
Cochran, W. G. (1950). The comparison of percentages in matched samples. Biometrika.
Conley, T. G. (1999). Gmm estimation with cross sectional dependence. Journal of econometrics, 92 (1), 1-45.

Cox, D. R. (1958). Two further applications of a model for binary regression. Biometrika, pp. 562-565.

- and Reid, N. (2000). The theory of the design of experiments. CRC Press.

De Mel, S., McKenzie, D. and Woodruff, C. (2008). Returns to capital in microenterprises: evidence from a field experiment. The Quarterly Journal of Economics, 123 (4), 1329-1372.

Deming, D. J., Goldin, C. and Katz, L. F. (2011). The For-Profit Postsecondary School Sector: Nimble Critters or Agile Predators? Tech. rep., National Bureau of Economic Research.

Diehr, P. (1995). Breaking the matches in a paired t-test for community interventions when the number of pairs is small. Stat Med, 14 (13), 1491-1504.

Diggle, P., Heagerty, P., Liang, K.-Y. and Zeger, S. (2002). Analysis of longitudinal data. Oxford University Press.

Donner, A. (1987). Statistical methodology for paired cluster designs. American Journal of Epidemiology, 126 (5), 972-979.

- and Klar, N. (2004). Pitfalls of and controversies in cluster randomization trials. American Journal of Public Health, 94 (3), 416.

Duflo, E., Glennerster, R. and Kremer, M. (2007). Using randomization in development economics research: A toolkit. Handbook of development economics, 4, 3895-3962.

Efron, B. (1971). Forcing a sequential experiment to be balanced. Biometrika, 58 (3), 403-417.
Finkelstein, A., Taubman, S., Wright, B., Bernstein, M., Gruber, J., Newhouse, J. P., Allen, H., Baicker, K. et al. (2012). The oregon health insurance experiment: Evidence from the first year*. The Quarterly Journal of Economics, 127 (3), 1057-1106.

Fisher, R. A. (1935). The design of experiments. Oliver \& Boyd.
Flores-Lagunes, A., Gonzalez, A. and Neumann, T. (2010). Learning but not earning? the impact of job corps training on hispanic youth. Economic Inquiry, 48 (3), 651-667.

Fortin, N. M. (2006). Higher-education policies and the college wage premium: Cross-state evidence from the 1990s. The American Economic Review, pp. 959-987.

Gail, M. H., Mark, S. D., Carroll, R. J., Green, S. B. and Pee, D. (1996). On design considerations and randomization-based inference for community intervention trials. Statistics in medicine, 15 (11), 1069-1092.

Gill, A. M. and Leigh, D. E. (2003). Do the returns to community colleges differ between academic and vocational programs? Journal of Human Resources, 38 (1), 134-155.

Greenwald, B. C. (1983). A general analysis of bias in the estimated standard errors of least squares coefficients. Journal of Econometrics, 22 (3), 323-338.

Greevy, R., Lu, B., Silber, J. H. and Rosenbaum, P. (2004). Optimal multivariate matching before randomization. Biostatistics, 5 (2), 263-275.

Greevy, R. A., Grialva, C. G., Roumie, C. L., Beck, C., Hung, A. M., Murff, H. J., Liu, X. and Griffin, M. R. (2012). Reweighted mahalanobis distance matching for cluster-randomized trials with missing data. Pharmacoepidemiology and drug safety, 21 (S2), 148-154.

Grubb, W. N. (1993). The varied economic returns to postsecondary education. Journal of Human Resources, 28 (2).

Hahn, J. (1998). On the role of the propensity score in efficient semiparametric estimation of average treatment effects. Econometrica, pp. 315-331.
-, Hirano, K. and Karlan, D. (2011). Adaptive experimental design using the propensity score. Journal of Business \& Economic Statistics, 29 (1), 96-108.

Hansen, B. B. (2008). The prognostic analogue of the propensity score. Biometrika, 95 (2), 481-488.
Hansen, C. B. (2007). Generalized least squares inference in panel and multilevel models with serial correlation and fixed effects. Journal of Econometrics, 140 (2), 670-694.

Hastie, T., Tibshirani, R., Friedman, J. and Franklin, J. (2005). The elements of statistical learning: data mining, inference and prediction. The Mathematical Intelligencer, 27 (2), 83-85.

Heinemann, H. N. and Sussna, E. (1977). The economic benefits of a community college education. Industrial Relations: A Journal of Economy and Society, 16 (3), 345-354.

Hilmer, M. J. (1997). Does community college attendance provide a strategic path to a higher quality education? Economics of Education Review, 16 (1), 59-68.

- (2000). Does the return to university quality differ for transfer students and direct attendees? Economics of Education Review, 19 (1), 47-61.

Hirano, K., Imbens, G. W. and Ridder, G. (2003). Efficient estimation of average treatment effects using the estimated propensity score. Econometrica, 71 (4), 1161-1189.

Hoxby, C. and Turner, S. (2013). Expanding college opportunities for high-achieving, low income students. Stanford Institute for Economic Policy Research Discussion Paper, (12-014).

Ibragimov, R. and Müller, U. K. (2010). t-statistic based correlation and heterogeneity robust inference. Journal of Business E Economic Statistics, 28 (4), 453-468.

Imat, K. (2008). Variance identification and efficiency analysis in randomized experiments under the matched-pair design. Statistics in medicine, 27 (24), 4857-4873.
-, King, G., Nall, C. et al. (2009). The essential role of pair matching in cluster-randomized experiments, with application to the mexican universal health insurance evaluation. Statistical Science, 24 (1), 29-53.
—, — and Stuart, E. A. (2008). Misunderstandings between experimentalists and observationalists about causal inference. Journal of the royal statistical society: series A (statistics in society), 171 (2), 481-502.

Imbens, G. W. and Angrist, J. D. (1994). Identification and estimation of local average treatment effects. Econometrica: Journal of the Econometric Society, pp. 467-475.
-, King, G., McKenzie, D. and Ridder, G. (2009). On the finite sample benefits of stratification in randomized experiments.

Jacobson, L., LaLonde, R. J. and Sullivan, D. (2005). The impact of community college retraining on older displaced workers: Should we teach old dogs new tricks? Industrial and Labor Relations Review, pp. 398-415.

Kane, T. J., McCaffrey, D. F., Miller, T. and Staiger, D. O. (2013). Have we identified effective teachers? validating measures of effective teaching using random assignment. research paper. met project. Bill $\mathcal{E}$ Melinda Gates Foundation.

- and Rouse, C. E. (1995a). Comment on w. norton grubb:" the varied economic returns to postsecondary education: New evidence from the class of 1972". Journal of Human Resources, pp. 205-221.
— and - (1995b). Labor-market returns to two-and four-year college. American Economic Review, 85 (3), 600-614.
— and - (1999). The community college: Educating students at the margin between college and work. The Journal of Economic Perspectives, pp. 63-84.

Karlan, D. (2013). Fighting poverty with actual evidence. Interview by Stephen Dubner.
Kasy, M. (2013). Why experimenters should not randomize, and what they should do instead. Tech. rep.

Leigh, D. E. and Gill, A. M. (1997). Labor market returns to community colleges: Evidence for returning adults. Journal of Human Resources, pp. 334-353.

Lemieux, T. and Card, D. (2001). Education, earnings, and the ?canadian gi bill? Canadian Journal of Economics/Revue canadienne d'économique, 34 (2), 313-344.

Liang, K.-Y. and Zeger, S. L. (1986). Longitudinal data analysis using generalized linear models. Biometrika, 73 (1), 13-22.

Light, A. and Strayer, W. (2004). Who receives the college wage premium? assessing the labor market returns to degrees and college transfer patterns. Journal of Human Resources, 39 (3), 746-773.

Lock, K. and Rubin, D. (2012). Re-randomization to improve covariate balance in experiments. The Annals of Statistics, 40 (2), 1263-1282.

Lock, K. F. (2011). Re-randomization to Improve Covariate Balance in Randomized Experiments. Tech. rep.

Ludwig, J., Duncan, G. J., Gennetian, L. A., Katz, L. F., Kessler, R. C., Kling, J. R. and Sanbonmatsu, L. (2012). Neighborhood effects on the long-term well-being of low-income adults. Science, 337 (6101), 1505-1510.

Lynn, H. and McCulloch, C. (1992). When does it pay to break the matches for analysis of a matchedpair design. Biometrics, 48, 397-409.

Manski, C. F., McFadden, D. et al. (1981). Structural analysis of discrete data with econometric applications. MIT Press Cambridge, MA.

Mantel, N. (1967). The detection of disease clustering and a generalized regression approach. Cancer research, 27 (2 Part 1), 209-220.

Martin, D. C., Diehr, P., Perrin, E. B. and Koepsell, T. D. (1993). The effect of matching on the power of randomized community intervention studies. Statistics in Medicine, 12 (3-4), 329-338.

McCrary, J. (2008). Manipulation of the running variable in the regression discontinuity design: A density test. Journal of Econometrics, 142 (2), 698-714.

McEntegart, D. J. (2003). The pursuit of balance using stratified and dynamic randomization techniques: an overview. Drug Information Journal, 37 (3), 293-308.

McKinlay, S. M. (1977). Pair-matching-a reappraisal of a popular technique. Biometrics, 33 (4), 725-735.

McNemar, Q. (1947). Note on the sampling error of the difference between correlated proportions or percentages. Psychometrika, 12 (2), 153-157.

Mosteller, F. (1952). Some statistical problems in measuring the subjective response to drugs. Biometrics, 8 (3), 220-226.

Moulton, B. R. (1986). Random group effects and the precision of regression estimates. Journal of econometrics, 32 (3), 385-397.

Neyman, J. (1934). On the two different aspects of the representative method: the method of stratified sampling and the method of purposive selection. Journal of the Royal Statistical Society, pp. 558625.

Papadimitriou, C. H. and Steiglitz, K. (1998). Combinatorial optimization: algorithms and complexity. Courier Dover Publications.

Pearson, K. (1901). On lines and planes of closest fit to systems of points in space. Philosophical Magazine, 2 (11), 559-572.

Рососк, S. J. (1979). Allocation of patients to treatment in clinical trials. Biometrics, 35 (1), 183-197.

- and Simon, R. (1975). Sequential treatment assignment with balancing for prognostic factors in the controlled clinical trial. Biometrics, pp. 103-115.

Rosenbaum, P. R. (2002). Observational studies. Springer.
Rosenberger, W. F. and Sverdlov, O. (2008). Handling covariates in the design of clinical trials. Statistical Science, pp. 404-419.

Rouse, C. E. (1995). Democratization or diversion? the effect of community colleges on educational attainment. Journal of Business $\mathcal{E}$ Economic Statistics, 13 (2), 217-224.

Rubin, D. B. (1973). Matching to remove bias in observational studies. Biometrics, pp. 159-183.
Ruggles, S., Sobek, M., Alexander, T., Fitch, C. A., Goeken, R., Hall, P. K., King, M. and Ronnander, C. (). Integrated public use microdata series: Version 4.0 [machine-readable database]. minneapolis, mn : Minnesota population center [producer and distributor], 2008. The Review of Economics and Statistics, 88 (2), 324-335.

Schabenberger, O. and Gotway, C. A. (2004). Statistical methods for spatial data analysis. CRC Press.
Schwarz, G. et al. (1978). Estimating the dimension of a model. The annals of statistics, 6 (2), 461-464.

Scott, N. W., McPherson, G. C., Ramsay, C. R. and Campbell, M. K. (2002). The method of minimization for allocation to clinical trials: a review. Controlled clinical trials, 23 (6), 662-674.

Senn, S. (2004). Controversies concerning randomization and additivity in clinical trials. Statistics in Medicine, 23 (24), 3729-3753.

Shibata, R. (1976). Selection of the order of an autoregressive model by akaike's information criterion. Biometrika, 63 (1), 117-126.

Shipley, M., Smith, P. and Dramaix, M. (1989). Calculation of power for matched pair studies when randomization is by group. International journal of epidemiology, 18 (2), 457-461.

Simon, R. (1979). Restricted randomization designs in clinical trials. Biometrics, 35 (2), 503.
Small, D. S., Ten Have, T. R. and Rosenbaum, P. R. (2008). Randomization inference in a grouprandomized trial of treatments for depression: Covariate adjustment, noncompliance, and quantile effects. Journal of the American Statistical Association, 103 (481), 271-279.

Snedecor, G. (). W and cochran, w g (1979) statistical methods.
Solomon, H. and Zacks, S. (1970). Optimal design of sampling from finite populations: A critical review and indication of new research areas. Journal of the American Statistical Association, 65 (330), 653-677.

Spearman, C. (1904). "General intelligence," objectively determined and measured. The American Journal of Psychology, 15 (2), 201-292.

Splawa-Neyman, J., Dabrowska, D., Speed, T. et al. (1990). On the application of probability theory to agricultural experiments. essay on principles. section 9. Statistical Science, 5 (4), 465-472.

Stuart, A. (1957). The comparison of frequencies in matched samples. British Journal of Statistical Psychology, 10 (1), 29-32.

Sukhatme, P. (1935). Contribution to the theory of the representative method. Supplement to the Journal of the Royal Statistical Society, pp. 253-268.

Tibshirani, R. (1996). Regression shrinkage and selection via the lasso. Journal of the Royal Statistical Society. Series B (Methodological), pp. 267-288.

Wei, L. (1978). The adaptive biased coin design for sequential experiments. The Annals of Statistics, pp. 92-100.

White, S. and Freedman, L. (1978). Allocation of patients to treatment groups in a controlled clinical study. British Journal of Cancer, 37 (5), 849.

Wooldridge, J. M. (2010). Econometric analysis of cross section and panel data. MIT press.

## Appendix A

## Appendix to Chapter 1

## A. 1 Supplementary Results

For the general model, leaving aside terms that do not involve unknown parameters, the log likelihood function is

$$
L(\gamma \mid \mathbf{Y})=-\frac{1}{2} \ln (\operatorname{det}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)))-\mathbf{Y}^{\prime} \Omega^{-1}(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma) \mathbf{Y} / 2
$$

The matrix $\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)$ is large in our illustrations, with dimension $2,590,190$ by $2,590,190$. Direct maximization of the log likelihood function is therefore not feasible. However, because locations are measured by puma locations, $\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \gamma)$ has a block structure, and calculations of the log likelihood simplify and can be written in terms of first and second moments by puma. We first give a couple of preliminary results.

Theorem 2. (Sylvester's Determinant Theorem) Let A and B be arbitrary $M \times N$ matrices. Then:

$$
\operatorname{det}\left(I_{N}+A^{\prime} B\right)=\operatorname{det}\left(I_{M}+B A^{\prime}\right)
$$

Proof of Theorem 2: Consider a block matrix $\left(\begin{array}{ll}M_{1} & M_{2} \\ M_{3} & M_{4}\end{array}\right)$. Then:

$$
\operatorname{det}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
M_{1} & M_{2} \\
M_{3} & M_{4}
\end{array}\right)=\operatorname{det}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
M_{1} & 0 \\
M_{3} & I
\end{array}\right) \operatorname{det}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
I & M_{1}^{-1} M_{2} \\
0 & M_{4}-M_{3} M_{1}^{-1} M_{2}
\end{array}\right)=\operatorname{det} M_{1} \operatorname{det}\left(M_{4}-M_{3} M_{1}^{-1} M_{2}\right)
$$

similarly

$$
\operatorname{det}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
M_{1} & M_{2} \\
M_{3} & M_{4}
\end{array}\right)=\operatorname{det}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
I & M_{2} \\
0 & M_{4}
\end{array}\right) \operatorname{det}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
M_{1}-M_{2} M_{4}^{-1} M_{3} & 0 \\
M_{4}^{-1} M_{3} & I
\end{array}\right)=\operatorname{det} M_{4} \operatorname{det}\left(M_{1}-M_{2} M_{4}^{-1} M_{3}\right)
$$

Letting $M_{1}=I_{M}, M_{2}=-B, M_{3}=A^{\prime}, M_{4}=I_{N}$ yields the result.
Lemma 5. (Determinant of Cluster Covariance Matrix) Suppose $\mathbf{C}$ is an $N \times M$ matrix of binary cluster indicators, with $\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \mathbf{C}$ equal to a $M \times M$ diagonal matrix, $\Sigma$ is an arbitrary $M \times M$ matrix, and $I_{N}$ is the $N$-dimensional identity matrix. Then, for scalar $\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}$, and

$$
\Omega=\sigma_{\epsilon}^{2} I_{N}+\mathbf{C} \Sigma \mathbf{C}^{\prime} \quad \Omega_{C}=\Sigma+\sigma_{\epsilon}^{2}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \mathbf{C}\right)^{-1}
$$

we have

$$
\operatorname{det}(\Omega)=\left(\sigma_{\epsilon}^{2}\right)^{N-M} \operatorname{det}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \mathbf{C}\right) \operatorname{det}\left(\Omega_{C}\right)
$$

Proof of Lemma 5; By Sylvester's theorem:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{det}(\Omega) & =\left(\sigma_{\epsilon}^{2}\right)^{N} \operatorname{det}\left(I_{N}+\mathbf{C} \Sigma / \sigma_{\epsilon}^{2} \mathbf{C}^{\prime}\right)=\left(\sigma_{\epsilon}^{2}\right)^{N} \operatorname{det}\left(I_{M}+\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \mathbf{C} \Sigma / \sigma_{\epsilon}^{2}\right) \\
& =\left(\sigma_{\epsilon}^{2}\right)^{N} \operatorname{det}\left(I_{M}+\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \mathbf{C} \Omega_{C} / \sigma_{\epsilon}^{2}-I_{M}\right)=\left(\sigma_{\epsilon}^{2}\right)^{N} \operatorname{det}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \mathbf{C}\right) \operatorname{det}\left(\Omega_{C} / \sigma_{\epsilon}^{2}\right) \\
& =\left(\sigma_{\epsilon}^{2}\right)^{N-M}\left(\prod N_{p}\right) \operatorname{det}\left(\Omega_{C}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Lemma 6. Suppose Assumptions 3 and 4 hold. Then for any $N \times N$ matrix $\Omega$,

$$
\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \Omega \mathbf{W}\right]=\frac{M_{1} \cdot\left(M_{1}-1\right)}{M \cdot(M-1)} \cdot \iota_{N}^{\prime} \Omega \iota_{N}+\frac{M_{1} \cdot M_{0}}{M \cdot(M-1)} \cdot \operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \Omega \mathbf{C}\right) .
$$

Proof of Lemma6: We have

$$
\mathbb{E}\left[W_{i} \cdot W_{j}\right]= \begin{cases}M_{1} / M & \text { if } \forall m, C_{i m}=C_{j m}, \\ \left(M_{1} \cdot\left(M_{1}-1\right)\right) /(M \cdot(M-1)) & \text { otherwise } .\end{cases}
$$

it follows that

$$
\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{W} \mathbf{W}^{\prime}\right]=\frac{M_{1} \cdot\left(M_{1}-1\right)}{M \cdot(M-1)} \cdot \iota_{N} \iota_{N}^{\prime}+\left(\frac{M_{1}}{M}-\frac{M_{1} \cdot\left(M_{1}-1\right)}{M \cdot(M-1)}\right) \cdot \mathbf{C C}^{\prime}
$$

$$
=\frac{M_{1} \cdot\left(M_{1}-1\right)}{M \cdot(M-1)} \cdot \iota_{N} \iota_{N}^{\prime}+\frac{M_{1} \cdot M_{0}}{M \cdot(M-1)} \cdot \mathbf{C C}^{\prime} .
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \Omega \mathbf{W}\right]=\operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbb{E}\left[\Omega \mathbf{W} \mathbf{W}^{\prime}\right]\right) \\
= & \operatorname{trace}\left(\Omega \cdot\left(\frac{M_{1} \cdot\left(M_{1}-1\right)}{M \cdot(M-1)} \cdot \iota_{N} \iota_{N}^{\prime}+\frac{M_{1} \cdot M_{0}}{M \cdot(M-1)} \cdot \mathbf{C C}^{\prime}\right)\right) \\
= & \frac{M_{1} \cdot\left(M_{1}-1\right)}{M \cdot(M-1)} \cdot \iota_{N}^{\prime} \Omega \iota_{N}+\frac{M_{1} \cdot M_{0}}{M \cdot(M-1)} \cdot \operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \Omega \mathbf{C}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Lemma 7. Suppose the $N \times N$ matrix $\Omega$ satisfies

$$
\Omega=\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} \cdot I_{N}+\sigma_{C}^{2} \cdot \mathbf{C C}^{\prime}
$$

where $I_{N}$ is the $N \times N$ identity matrix, and $\mathbf{C}$ is an $N \times M$ matrix of zeros and ones, with $\mathbf{C} \iota_{M}=\iota_{N}$ and $\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \iota_{N}=(N / M) \iota_{M}$, so that,

$$
\Omega_{i j}= \begin{cases}\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}+\sigma_{C}^{2} & \text { if } i=j  \tag{A.1}\\ \sigma_{C}^{2} & \text { if } i \neq j, \forall m, C_{i m}=C_{j m} \\ 0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Then, $(i)$

$$
\ln (\operatorname{det}(\Omega))=N \cdot \ln \left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}\right)+M \cdot \ln \left(1+\frac{N}{M} \cdot \frac{\sigma_{C}^{2}}{\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}}\right),
$$

and, (ii)

$$
\Omega^{-1}=\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{-2} \cdot I_{N}-\frac{\sigma_{C}^{2}}{\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} \cdot\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}+\sigma_{C}^{2} \cdot N / M\right)} \cdot \mathbf{C C}^{\prime}
$$

Proof of Lemma 7; First, consider the first part. Apply Lemma 5 with

$$
\Sigma=\sigma_{C}^{2} \cdot I_{M}, \quad \text { and } \quad \mathbf{C}^{\prime} \mathbf{C}=\frac{N}{M} \cdot I_{M}, \quad \text { so that } \quad \Omega_{C}=\left(\sigma_{C}^{2}+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} \cdot \frac{M}{N}\right) \cdot I_{M} .
$$

Then, by Lemma 5, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \ln \operatorname{det}(\Omega)=(N-M) \cdot \ln \left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}\right)+M \cdot \ln (N / M)+\ln \operatorname{det}\left(\Omega_{C}\right) \\
& \quad=(N-M) \cdot \ln \left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}\right)+M \cdot \ln (N / M)+M \cdot \ln \left(\sigma_{C}^{2}+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} \cdot \frac{M}{N}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
= & (N-M) \cdot \ln \left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}\right)+M \cdot \ln \left(\frac{N}{M} \sigma_{C}^{2}+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}\right) \\
& =N \cdot \ln \left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}\right)+M \cdot \ln \left(1+\frac{N}{M} \cdot \frac{\sigma_{C}^{2}}{\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Next, consider part (ii). We need to show that

$$
\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} \cdot I_{N}+\sigma_{C}^{2} \cdot \mathbf{C C}^{\prime}\right)\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{-2} \cdot I_{N}-\frac{\sigma_{C}^{2}}{\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} \cdot\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}+\sigma_{C}^{2} \cdot N / M\right)} \cdot \mathbf{C C}^{\prime}\right)=I_{N}
$$

which amounts to showing that

$$
-\frac{\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} \cdot \sigma_{C}^{2}}{\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} \cdot\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}+\sigma_{C}^{2} \cdot N / M\right)} \cdot \mathbf{C C}^{\prime}+\sigma_{C}^{2} \cdot \mathbf{C C}^{\prime} \sigma_{\varepsilon}^{-2}-\mathbf{C C}^{\prime} \cdot \frac{\sigma_{C}^{4}}{\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} \cdot\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}+\sigma_{C}^{2} \cdot N / M\right)} \cdot \mathbf{C C}^{\prime}=0
$$

This follows directly from the fact that $\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \mathbf{C}=(N / M) \cdot I_{M}$ and collecting the terms.

Proof of Lemma 2; By the constant treatment effect assumption, and by Assumption 2, the result follows directly from the Neyman Lemma on unit-level randomization

Proof of Lemma 3; The unbiasedness result directly follows from the conditional unbiasedness established in Lemma 2. Next we establish the second part of the Lemma. By the Law of Iterated Expectations,

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathbb{V}_{U}(\mathbf{Z}) & =\mathbb{V}\left(\mathbb{E}\left[\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }} \mid \mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z}\right] \mid \mathbf{Z}, N_{1}\right)+\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{V}\left(\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }} \mid \mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z}\right) \mid \mathbf{Z}, N_{1}\right]  \tag{A.2}\\
& =\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{V}\left(\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }} \mid \mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z}\right) \mid \mathbf{Z}, N_{1}\right]
\end{align*}
$$

where the second line follows since $\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ is unbiased. By Lemma2, we have:

$$
\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{V}\left(\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{ols}} \mid \mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z}\right) \mid \mathbf{Z}, N_{1}\right]=\mathbb{E}\left[\left.\frac{N}{N_{0} \cdot N_{1} \cdot(N-2)} \sum_{i=1}^{N}\left(\varepsilon_{i}-\bar{\varepsilon}\right)^{2} \right\rvert\, \mathbf{Z}, N_{1}\right]
$$

Observe that we can write:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{i=1}^{N}\left(\varepsilon_{i}-\bar{\varepsilon}\right)^{2} & =\left(\varepsilon-\iota_{N} \iota_{N}^{\prime} \varepsilon / N\right)^{\prime}\left(\varepsilon-\iota_{N} \iota_{N}^{\prime} \varepsilon / N\right) \\
& =\varepsilon^{\prime} \varepsilon-2 \varepsilon^{\prime} \iota_{N} \iota_{N}^{\prime} \varepsilon / N+\varepsilon^{\prime} \iota_{N} \iota_{N} \iota_{N} \iota_{N}^{\prime} \varepsilon / N^{2} \\
& =\varepsilon^{\prime} \varepsilon-\varepsilon^{\prime} \iota_{N} \iota_{N}^{\prime} \varepsilon / N
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{V}_{U}(\mathbf{Z}) & =\frac{N}{N_{0} \cdot N_{1} \cdot(N-2)} \mathbb{E}\left[\varepsilon^{\prime} \varepsilon-\varepsilon^{\prime} \iota_{N} \iota_{N}^{\prime} \varepsilon / N \mid \mathbf{Z}, N_{0}, N_{1}\right] \\
& =\frac{N}{N_{0} \cdot N_{1} \cdot(N-2)} \operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbb{E}\left[\varepsilon \varepsilon^{\prime}-\iota_{N}^{\prime} \varepsilon \varepsilon^{\prime} \iota_{N} / N \mid \mathbf{Z}, N_{0}, N_{1}\right]\right) \\
& =\frac{N}{N_{0} \cdot N_{1} \cdot(N-2)}\left(\operatorname{trace}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}))-\iota_{N}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}) \iota_{N} / N\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

which establishes (1.11). Finally, we prove the third part of the Lemma. By Lemma $1, \hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ is unbiased conditional on $\mathbf{Z}, \mathbf{W}$, so that by argument like in Equation (A.2) above, we can also write:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{V}_{U}(\mathbf{Z}) & =\mathbb{V}\left(\mathbb{E}\left[\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{ols}} \mid \mathbf{Z}, \mathbf{W}\right] \mid \mathbf{Z}, N_{1}\right)+\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{V}\left(\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{ols}} \mid \mathbf{Z}, \mathbf{W}\right) \mid \mathbf{Z}, N_{1}\right] \\
& =\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{V}\left(\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{ols}} \mid \mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z}\right) \mid \mathbf{Z}, N_{1}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

which equals $\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{V}_{R}(\mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z}) \mid \mathbf{Z}, N_{1}\right]$ by A.2].

Proof of Lemma 4: To show the first part of the Lemma, observe that under constant cluster size,

$$
\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{ols}}=\frac{\sum_{m=1}^{M}\left(\tilde{Y}_{m}-\tilde{\tilde{Y}}\right)^{2}\left(\tilde{W}_{m}-\tilde{\tilde{W}}\right)}{\sum_{m}\left(\tilde{W}_{m}-\tilde{W}\right)^{2}}
$$

where $\tilde{Y}_{m}=(N / M)^{-1} \sum_{i: C_{i m}=1} Y_{i}$, and $\bar{Y}=M^{-1} \sum_{m} \tilde{Y}_{m}=\bar{Y}$, and $\overline{\tilde{W}}=\bar{W}$. Therefore, we can apply Lemma 2, treating cluster averages $\left(\tilde{Y}_{m}, \tilde{W}_{m}, \tilde{\epsilon}_{m}\right)$ as a unit of observation, which yields the result.

To show the second part, again by Lemma $2 . \hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }}$ is unbiased, so that by the Law of Iterated Expectations, and the first part of the Lemma,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{V}_{U}(\mathbf{Z}) & =\mathbb{V}\left(\mathbb{E}\left[\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }} \mid \mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z}\right] \mid \mathbf{Z}, M_{1}\right)+\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{V}\left(\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }} \mid \mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z}\right) \mid \mathbf{Z}, M_{1}\right] \\
& =\mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{V}\left(\hat{\beta}_{\text {ols }} \mid \mathbf{Y}(0), \mathbf{Y}(1), \mathbf{Z}\right) \mid \mathbf{Z}, M_{1}\right] \\
& =\mathbb{E}\left[\left.\frac{M}{(M-2) \cdot M_{0} \cdot M_{1}} \sum_{m=1}^{M}\left(\tilde{\varepsilon}_{m}-\overline{\tilde{\varepsilon}}\right)^{2} \right\rvert\, \mathbf{Z}, M_{1}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence, it suffices to show that

$$
\mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{s=1}^{M}\left(\tilde{\varepsilon}_{s}-\overline{\tilde{\varepsilon}}\right)^{2} \mid \mathbf{Z}, M_{1}\right]=\left(\frac{M^{2}}{N^{2}} \cdot \operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}) \mathbf{C}\right)-\frac{M}{N^{2}} \iota^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}) \iota\right) .
$$

Note that in general $\mathbf{C}_{M}=\iota_{N}$, and under Assumption 4 , it follows that $\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \mathbf{C}=(N / M) \cdot I_{M}$. We can
write

$$
\tilde{\varepsilon}_{m}=\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \mathbf{C}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{C}^{\prime} \varepsilon=\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}^{\prime} \varepsilon, \quad \text { and } \quad \overline{\tilde{\varepsilon}}=\frac{1}{M} \iota_{M}^{\prime}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \mathbf{C}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{C}^{\prime} \varepsilon=\frac{1}{N} \iota_{N}^{\prime} \varepsilon
$$

so that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{m=1}^{M}\left(\tilde{\varepsilon}_{m}-\overline{\tilde{\varepsilon}}\right)^{2}=\left(\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}^{\prime} \varepsilon-\frac{1}{M} \iota_{M} \iota_{N}^{\prime} \varepsilon\right)^{\prime}\left(\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}^{\prime} \varepsilon-\frac{1}{M} \iota_{M} \iota_{N}^{\prime} \varepsilon\right) \\
&=\left(\left(\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}^{\prime}-\frac{1}{N} \iota_{M} \iota_{N}^{\prime}\right) \varepsilon\right)^{\prime}\left(\left(\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}^{\prime}-\frac{1}{N} \iota_{M} \iota_{N}^{\prime}\right) \varepsilon\right) \\
&= \varepsilon^{\prime}\left(\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}-\frac{1}{N} \iota_{N} \iota_{M}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}\left(\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}^{\prime}-\frac{1}{N} \iota_{M} \iota_{N}^{\prime}\right) \varepsilon
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{m=1}^{M}\left(\tilde{\varepsilon}_{s}-\overline{\tilde{\varepsilon}}\right)^{2} \mid \mathbf{Z}, M_{1}\right]=\mathbb{E}\left[\left.\varepsilon^{\prime}\left(\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}-\frac{1}{N} \iota_{N} \iota_{M}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}\left(\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}^{\prime}-\frac{1}{N} \iota_{M} \iota_{N}^{\prime}\right) \varepsilon \right\rvert\, \mathbf{Z}, M_{1}\right] \\
=\operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbb{E}\left[\left.\left(\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}-\frac{1}{N} \iota_{N} \iota_{M}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}\left(\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}^{\prime}-\frac{1}{N} \iota_{M} \iota_{N}^{\prime}\right) \varepsilon \varepsilon^{\prime} \right\rvert\, \mathbf{Z}, M_{1}\right]\right) \\
=\operatorname{trace}\left(\left(\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}-\frac{1}{N} \iota_{N} \iota_{M}\right)^{\prime}\left(\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}^{\prime}-\frac{1}{N} \iota_{M} \iota_{N}^{\prime}\right) \Omega(\mathbf{Z})\right) \\
=\operatorname{trace}\left(\left(\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}^{\prime}-\frac{1}{N} \iota_{M} \iota_{N}^{\prime}\right) \Omega(\mathbf{Z})\left(\frac{M}{N} \mathbf{C}-\frac{1}{N} \iota_{N} \iota_{M}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}\right) \\
=\frac{M^{2}}{N^{2}} \cdot \operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}) \mathbf{C}\right)-\frac{M}{N^{2}} \cdot \iota_{N}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}) \iota_{N} .
\end{gathered}
$$

Proof of Theorem 1: Under Assumption 4, $\bar{W}=M_{1} / M$, which is non-random. Hence, in order to prove $\mathbb{V}_{U}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}), \mathbf{Z})=\mathbb{V}_{U}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \tilde{\gamma}), \mathbf{Z})$, it suffices to show that $\operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}) \mathbf{C}\right)=\operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \Omega\left(\mathbf{Z},\left(\tilde{\sigma}_{\varepsilon}, \tilde{\sigma}_{S}^{2}\right)\right) \mathbf{C}\right)$. The log likelihood function based on the specification A.1) is

$$
L\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{S}^{2} \mid \mathbf{Y}, \mathbf{Z}\right)=-\frac{1}{2} \cdot \ln \left(\Omega\left(\mathbf{Z}, \sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{S}^{2}\right)\right)-\frac{1}{2} \cdot \mathbf{Y}^{\prime} \Omega\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{S}^{2}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{Y}
$$

The expected value of the log likelihood function is

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathbb{E}\left[L\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{S}^{2} \mid \mathbf{Y}, \mathbf{Z}\right) \mid \mathbf{Z}\right]=-\frac{1}{2} \ln \left(\Omega\left(\mathbf{Z}, \sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{S}^{2}\right)\right)-\frac{1}{2} \cdot \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{Y}^{\prime} \Omega\left(\mathbf{Z}, \sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{C}^{2}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{Y}\right] \\
=-\frac{1}{2} \cdot \ln \left(\Omega\left(\mathbf{Z}, \sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{S}^{2}\right)\right)-\frac{1}{2} \cdot \operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbb{E}\left[\Omega\left(\mathbf{Z}, \sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{S}^{2}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{Y} \mathbf{Y}^{\prime}\right)\right]
\end{gathered}
$$

$$
=-\frac{1}{2} \cdot \ln \left(\Omega\left(\mathbf{Z}, \sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{S}^{2}\right)\right)-\frac{1}{2} \cdot \operatorname{trace}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbf{Z}, \sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{S}^{2}\right)^{-1} \Omega(\mathbf{Z})\right)
$$

Using Lemma 7, this is equal to

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{E} & {\left[L\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{S}^{2} \mid \mathbf{Y}, \mathbf{Z}\right) \mid \mathbf{Z}\right]=-\frac{N}{2} \cdot \ln \left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}\right)-\frac{M}{2} \cdot \ln \left(1+N / M \cdot \sigma_{S}^{2} / \sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}\right) } \\
& -\frac{1}{2 \cdot \sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}} \cdot \operatorname{trace}(\Omega(\mathbf{Z}))+\frac{\sigma_{S}^{2}}{2 \cdot \sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} \cdot\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}+\sigma_{S}^{2} \cdot N / M\right)} \cdot \operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}) \mathbf{C}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

The first derivative of the expected $\log$ likelihood function with respect to $\sigma_{S}^{2}$ is

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial \sigma_{S}^{2}} \mathbb{E}\left[L\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}, \sigma_{S}^{2} \mid \mathbf{Y}, \mathbf{Z}\right) \mid \mathbf{Z}\right]=-\frac{N}{2 \cdot\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}+N / M \cdot \sigma_{S}^{2}\right)}+\frac{\operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}) \mathbf{C}\right)}{\left(\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}+\sigma_{S}^{2} \cdot(N / M)\right)^{2}}
$$

Hence the first order condition for $\tilde{\sigma}_{S}^{2}$ implies that

$$
\operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}) \mathbf{C}\right)=N \cdot\left(\tilde{\sigma}_{\varepsilon}^{2}+\tilde{\sigma}_{S}^{2} \cdot(N / M)\right)
$$

For the misspecified error-covariance matrix $\Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \tilde{\gamma})$ we have

$$
\operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \tilde{\gamma}) \mathbf{C}\right)=\sum_{m=1}^{M}\left(N_{m}^{2} \cdot \tilde{\sigma}_{S}^{2}+N_{m} \cdot \tilde{\sigma}_{\varepsilon}^{2}\right)
$$

By equality of the cluster sizes this simplifies to

$$
\operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}, \tilde{\gamma}) \mathbf{C}\right)=N \cdot\left(\tilde{\sigma}_{\varepsilon}^{2}+\tilde{\sigma}_{S}^{2} \cdot(N / M)\right)=\operatorname{trace}\left(\mathbf{C}^{\prime} \Omega(\mathbf{Z}) \mathbf{C}\right)
$$

## Appendix B

## Appendix to Chapter 2

## B. 1 Supplementary Results

Given a matched pairs randomization one may wish to estimate an average treatment effect and/or test the null of no effect using t-statistic based tests. On the one hand, one can view the data as a set of $N$ outcome measurements from the experimental units where $N / 2$ have been treated. Given the paired nature of the data proper standard errors can be computed by regressing the $N$ outcome measurements on a treatment indicator alongside a set of $N / 2$ pair indicators.

On the other hand, one can view the data as a set of $n=N / 2$ within pair differences, where one is simply estimating the mean of the differences. Proper standard errors here can be computed using the sample standard deviation of the differences.

In fact, tests using the mean of within-pair differences, and regressions of the pooled experimental units with pair dummies both accounting for and not accounting for heteroskedasticity in standard ways, are equivalent. We show this below.

The first of two complimentary results is that these two procedures are mathematically equivalent. They produce the same estimates of the treatment effect and the same standard errors. One may note that
standard errors in the first case will depend on whether or not the experimenter makes an assumption about homoskedasticy. The second complimentary result we present is that in the first procedure standard errors constructed under the homoskedasticy assumption and standard errors constructed using the Huber-Eicker-White procedure are equivalent.

This second result holds more generally for all stratifications with equal sized strata and equal numbers of treated and control units within each stratum, for example when experimental units are blocked into groups of four and in each block two units are treated.

The mean of the differences

Let $d_{1}, \ldots, d_{n}$ be the set of within pair differences where the untreated unit is subtracted from the treated unit in each pair. Let $b \equiv \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} d_{i}$ be the treatment effect estimator.

Further let us test the the null of no treatment effect with a two tailed test using the test statistic. There is a finite sample justification for this test that comes from an assumption of i.i.d normal errors,

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{\text {stat } 1} \equiv \frac{b}{\sqrt{\frac{1}{n} \frac{1}{n-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(d_{i}-b\right)^{2}}} \tag{B.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and compare it to the critical values from a $t$-distribution with $n-1$ degrees of freedom. Individual units with pair dummies and regression

Let $Y$ be an $N \times 1$ vector of outcomes of experimental units where we denote the $i$ th element of this vector $y_{i}$ for $i=1, \ldots, N$. Also let $X$ be an $N \times k$ matrix, where $k=N / 2+1$, the first column of $X$ is a treatment indicator and the next $N$ columns of $X$ are pair indicators.

Without loss of generality let the rows of $Y$ and $X$ that correspond to the same pair be grouped together such that the odd numbered rows correspond to treated observations.

Now consider the projection of $Y$ onto the column space of $X$. It is a standard result that least
squares with group indicators is equivalent to within group least squares and with two observations per group, this is the same as least squares on the difference which here is the mean of $d_{i}$. The coefficient on the treatment indicator in the least squares fit is $\frac{2}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N}(-1)^{i+1} y_{i}=\frac{1}{n} \sum d_{i}=$ $b$. The coefficient on the first pair dummy is $\frac{1}{2}\left(y_{1}-b+y_{2}\right)$, the coefficient on the second pair dummy is $\frac{1}{2}\left(y_{3}-b+y_{4}\right)$ and in general the coefficient for the $i$ th pair dummy is $\frac{1}{2}\left(y_{2 i-1}-b+y_{2 i}\right)$. The formulas for these coefficients can be verified by checking that the implied residuals are in fact orthogonal to the columns of $X$. Let the residual for the $i$ th be $e_{i}$ for $i=1, \ldots, N$.

Denote Huber-Eicker-White heteroskedasticity consistent covariance estimator as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\Sigma}_{W} \equiv \frac{N}{N-k}\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{N} x_{i} x_{i}^{\prime} e_{i}^{2}\right)\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1} \tag{B.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $x_{i}$ is the $i$ th row of $X$.
One would test the null of no treatment effect using the test statistic

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{s t a t 2} \equiv \frac{b}{\sqrt{\hat{\Sigma}_{W 1,1}}} \tag{B.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{\Sigma}_{W 1,1}$ is the $(1,1)$ element of $\hat{\Sigma}_{W}$.

Assuming homoskedasticity the standard covariance estimator is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\Sigma}_{H} \equiv\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1} \frac{1}{N-k} \sum_{i=1}^{N} e_{i}^{2} \tag{B.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

One would test the null of no treatment effect using the test statistic

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{\text {stat } 3} \equiv \frac{b}{\sqrt{\hat{\Sigma}_{H 1,1}}} \tag{B.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{\Sigma}_{H 1,1}$ is the $(1,1)$ element of $\hat{\Sigma}_{H}$.
In each case following the linear regression model one would use critical values from at-distribution with $N-k=N-\frac{N}{2}-1=n-1$ degrees of freedom.

Claim 1: $\quad \hat{\Sigma}_{W 1,1}=\hat{\Sigma}_{H 1,1}$
proof:
Let $I_{s}$ be the identity matrix of size $s$, let $k=\frac{N}{2}+1$, and let $1_{s, t}$ be a matrix of size $s \times t$ where each element is a one. First notice that $X=\left(1_{k-1,1} \otimes\binom{1}{0}, I_{k-1} \otimes\binom{1}{1}\right)$ so

$$
\begin{aligned}
X^{\prime} X & =\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\left(1_{1, k-1} 1_{k-1,1}\right) \otimes\left((1,0)\binom{1}{0}\right) & \left(1_{1, k-1} I_{k-1}\right) \otimes\left((1,0)\binom{1}{1}\right) \\
\left(I_{k-1} 1_{k-1,1}\right) \otimes\left((1,1)\binom{1}{0}\right) & \left(I_{k-1} I_{k-1}\right) \otimes\left((1,1)\binom{1}{1}\right)
\end{array}\right) \\
& =\left(\begin{array}{cc}
k-1 & 1_{1, k-1} \\
1_{k-1,1} & 2 I_{k-1}
\end{array}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

and that the inverse of this block matrix is

$$
\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}=\frac{2}{N}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
2 & -1_{1, k-1}  \tag{B.6}\\
-1_{k-1,1} & \frac{N}{4} I_{k-1}+1_{k-1, k-1}
\end{array}\right)
$$

So $\hat{\Sigma}_{H 1,1}=\frac{4}{N} \frac{1}{N-k} \sum_{i=1}^{N} e_{i}^{2}$.
Now we show that $\hat{\Sigma}_{W 1,1}=\frac{4}{N} \frac{1}{N-k} \sum_{i=1}^{N} e_{i}^{2}$.

## Consider

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\Sigma}_{W} \equiv \frac{N}{N-k}\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{N} x_{i} x_{i}^{\prime} e_{i}^{2}\right)\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}=\frac{N}{N-k}\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1} X^{\prime} \hat{\Omega} X\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1} \tag{B.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $x_{i}$ is the $i$ th row of $X$, and $\hat{\Omega}$ is $N \times N$ where $\Omega_{i, j}=e_{i}^{2} 1\{i=j\}$.

Next note that $\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1} X^{\prime} \hat{\Omega}=$

$$
\frac{1}{N}\left(\begin{array}{ccccccc}
2 e_{1}^{2} & -2 e_{2}^{2} & 2 e_{3}^{2} & -2 e_{4}^{2} & \ldots & 2 e_{N-1}^{2} & -2 e_{N}^{2} \\
\left(\frac{N}{2}-1\right) e_{1}^{2} & \left(\frac{N}{2}+1\right) e_{2}^{2} & -e_{3}^{2} & e_{4}^{2} & \ldots & -e_{N-1}^{2} & e_{N}^{2} \\
-e_{1}^{2} & e_{2}^{2} & \left(\frac{N}{2}-1\right) e_{3}^{2} & \left(\frac{N}{2}+1\right) e_{4}^{2} & \cdots & -e_{N-1}^{2} & e_{N}^{2} \\
-e_{1}^{2} & e_{2}^{2} & -e_{3}^{2} & e_{4}^{2} & \cdots & -e_{N-1}^{2} & e_{N}^{2} \\
\vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & & \vdots & \vdots \\
-e_{1}^{2} & e_{2}^{2} & -e_{3}^{2} & e_{4}^{2} & \cdots & \left(\frac{N}{2}-1\right) e_{N-1}^{2} & \left(\frac{N}{2}+1\right) e_{N}^{2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

and $X\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}=$

$$
\frac{1}{N}\left(\begin{array}{rrrrrrr}
2 & \frac{N}{2}-1 & -1 & -1 & -1 & \ldots & -1 \\
-2 & \frac{N}{2}+1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & \ldots & 1 \\
2 & -1 & \frac{N}{2}-1 & -1 & -1 & \ldots & -1 \\
-2 & 1 & \frac{N}{2}+1 & 1 & 1 & \ldots & 1 \\
2 & -1 & -1 & \frac{N}{2}-1 & -1 & \ldots & -1 \\
-2 & 1 & 1 & \frac{N}{2}+1 & 1 & \ldots & 1 \\
\vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ldots & \vdots \\
2 & -1 & -1 & -1 & -1 & \ldots & \frac{N}{2}-1 \\
-2 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & \ldots & \frac{N}{2}+1
\end{array}\right) .
$$

So the (1,1) element of $\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1} X^{\prime} \hat{\Omega} X\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}$ is $\frac{4}{N^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{N} e_{i}^{2}$. Thus $\hat{\Sigma}_{W 1,1}=\frac{N}{N-k} \frac{4}{N^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{N} e_{i}^{2}$. $\square$

Claim 2: $\hat{\Sigma}_{H 1,1}=\frac{1}{n} \frac{1}{n-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(d_{i}-b\right)^{2}$ proof:

Consider the residuals from the regression:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& e_{1}=y_{1}-\frac{1}{2}\left(y_{1}-b+y_{2}\right)-b \\
& e_{2}=y_{2}-\frac{1}{2}\left(y_{1}-b+y_{2}\right) \\
& e_{3}=y_{3}-\frac{1}{2}\left(y_{3}-b+y_{4}\right)-b \\
& e_{4}=y_{4}-\frac{1}{2}\left(y_{3}-b+y_{4}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and in general note that we can change indexes as follows

$$
\begin{align*}
\sum_{i=1}^{N} e_{i}^{2} & =\sum_{k=1}^{n}\left(e_{2 i-1}^{2}+e_{2 i}^{2}\right)  \tag{B.8}\\
& =\sum_{k=1}^{n}\left(y_{2 k-1}-\frac{1}{2}\left(y_{2 k-1}-b+y_{2 k}\right)-b\right)^{2}+\left(y_{2 k}-\frac{1}{2}\left(y_{2 k-1}-b+y_{2 k}\right)\right)^{2} \\
& =\frac{1}{4} \sum_{k=1}^{n}\left(d_{k}-b\right)^{2}+\left(b-d_{k}\right)^{2}=\frac{1}{2} \sum\left(d_{k}-b\right)^{2}
\end{align*}
$$

So

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{\Sigma}_{H 1,1} & =\frac{2}{N(N-k)} \sum_{k=1}^{n}\left(d_{k}-b\right)^{2} \\
& =\frac{1}{n\left(N-\left(\frac{N}{2}+1\right)\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{n}\left(d_{k}-b\right)^{2} \\
& =\frac{1}{n(n-1)} \sum_{k=1}^{n}\left(d_{k}-b\right)^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Generalization of claim 1 The result that regressions of the pooled experimental units with pair dummies both accounting for and not accounting for heteroskedasticity in standard ways are equivalent can be generalized to randomizations with equal sized strata and equal numbers of treated and control units within each stratum. Suppose that we have equal sized strata, let $S$
denote their size, $S$ even, $S$ divides $N$, and denote the number of strata $n_{s} \equiv \frac{N}{S}$. Now $X$ has the form

$$
X=\left[1_{\frac{N}{2}, 1} \otimes\binom{1}{0} ; I_{n_{s}} \otimes 1_{S, 1}\right]
$$

and

$$
X^{\prime} X=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\frac{N}{2} & \frac{S}{2} 1_{1, n_{s}} \\
\frac{S}{2} 1_{n_{s}, 1} & S I_{n_{s}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

so

$$
\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\frac{4}{N} & -\frac{2}{N} 1_{1, n_{s}} \\
-\frac{2}{N} 1_{n_{s}, 1} & \cdot
\end{array}\right)
$$

where we omit the lower right block of the inverse and note that it is not necessary for the remainder of the proof. Note that $\hat{\Omega}$ is diagonal with $(k, k)$ element $e_{k}^{2},\left[\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{k, 1}=4 / N$ if $k=1$ and $-2 / N$ if $k>1$, (3) $X_{j, 1}=1$ if $j$ odd and 0 else, and each sub-vector $X_{j, 2: K}$ has one 1 and K-1 zeros for all $j$, so that the conditions of lemma 1 hold. By lemma 1

$$
\left[\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1} X^{\prime} \hat{\Omega} X\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{1,1}=\frac{4}{N^{2}} \sum_{i=i}^{N} e_{i}^{2}
$$

## Lemma 1 If

- (A1) $\hat{\Omega}$ is diagonal with $(k, k)$ element $e_{k}^{2}, k=1, \ldots, N$
- (A2)

$$
\left[\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{k, 1}= \begin{cases}4 / N, & \text { if } k=1 \\ -2 / N, & \text { if } k>1,\end{cases}
$$

- (A3.1)

$$
X_{j, 1}= \begin{cases}1, & \text { if } j \text { odd } \\ 0, & \text { else }\end{cases}
$$

- and (A3.2) $X_{j, 2: K}$ has one 1 and $K-1$ zeros,
then $\left[\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1} X^{\prime} \hat{\Omega} X\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{1,1}=\frac{4}{N^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{N} e_{i}^{2}$
proof:

$$
\left[\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1} X^{\prime} \hat{\Omega} X\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{1,1}=\sum_{k=1}^{N}\left[\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1} X^{\prime}\right]_{1, k} \Omega_{k, k}\left[X\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{k, 1}
$$

$=\sum_{k=1}^{N} \Omega_{k, k}\left[X\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{k, 1}^{2}$. By lemma $2\left|\left[X\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{k, 1}\right|=\frac{2}{N}$ for all $k$. So

$$
\left[\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1} X^{\prime} \hat{\Omega} X\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{1,1}=\sum_{k=1}^{N} e_{k}^{2} \frac{4}{N^{2}} .
$$

Lemma 2 If conditions (A2) and (A3) of lemma 1 hold, then

$$
\left[X\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{k, 1}= \begin{cases}\frac{2}{N}, & \text { if } k \text { is odd }  \tag{B.9}\\ -\frac{2}{N}, & \text { if } k \text { is even. }\end{cases}
$$

proof: By definition $\left[X\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{j, 1}=\sum_{k=1}^{N} X_{j, k}\left[\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{k, 1}$. First consider

$$
\sum_{k=2}^{K} X_{j, k}\left[\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{k, 1}
$$

Since $k>1$, $\left[\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{k, 1}=-2 / N$ by condition (A2), and $X_{j, 2: K}$ has one 1 and $K-1$ zeros by condition (A3.2). So $\sum_{k=2}^{N} X_{j, k}\left[\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{k, 1}=\frac{2}{N}$. Now if $j$ is odd then $X_{1,1}=1$ by condition (A3) and $\left[\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{1,1}=4 / N$ by condition (A2), so $\left[X\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{k, 1}=\frac{4-2}{N}$. If $j$ is even then $X_{1,1}=0$ by condition (A3) and $\sum_{k=1}^{N} X_{j, k}\left[\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{k, 1}=\sum_{k=2}^{N} X_{j, k}\left[\left(X^{\prime} X\right)^{-1}\right]_{k, 1}=\frac{2}{N}$.

## Proofs

We are given $E\left(\theta_{i} \mid X, \epsilon\right)=\theta$. and that $T_{i}$ is independent of $\left\{Y_{i}(0), Y_{i}(1), X_{i}\right\}$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
Y_{i}(0)= & \theta_{i}+r\left(X_{i}\right)+\epsilon_{i} \\
Y_{i}= & T_{i} \theta_{i}+r\left(X_{i}\right)+\epsilon_{i} \\
D_{k}= & T_{2 k-1}\left[Y_{2 k-1}(1)-Y_{2 k}(0)\right]+\left(1-T_{2 k-1}\right)\left[Y_{2 k}(1)-Y_{2 k-1}(0)\right] \\
= & T_{2 k-1}\left[\theta_{2 k-1}+r\left(X_{2 k-1}\right)-r\left(X_{2 k}\right)+\epsilon_{2 k-1}-\epsilon_{2 k}\right] \\
& +\left(1-T_{2 k-1}\right)\left[\theta_{2 k}+r\left(X_{2 k}\right)-r\left(X_{2 k-1}\right)+\epsilon_{2 k}-\epsilon_{2 k-1}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $E\left(\epsilon_{i} \mid T\right)=0$, then

$$
\begin{align*}
E\left(D_{k} \mid T, X, \theta\right) & =T_{2 k-1}\left[\theta_{2 k-1}+r\left(X_{2 k-1}\right)-r\left(X_{2 k}\right)\right] \\
& +\left(1-T_{2 k-1}\right)\left[\theta_{2 k}+r\left(X_{2 k}\right)-r\left(X_{2 k-1}\right)\right] \\
& =\theta_{2 k}+T_{2 k-1}\left[\theta_{2 k-1}-\theta_{2 k}\right]+\left(2 T_{2 k-1}-1\right)\left[r\left(X_{2 k-1}\right)-r\left(X_{2 k}\right)\right] \tag{B.10}
\end{align*}
$$

## By iterated expectations

$$
\begin{aligned}
E\left(D_{k} \mid X, \theta\right) & =E\left(E\left(D_{k} \mid T, X, \theta\right) \mid X, \theta\right) \\
& =\theta_{2 k}+\frac{1}{2}\left(\theta_{2 k-1}-\theta_{2 k}\right) \\
& =\frac{1}{2}\left(\theta_{2 k-1}+\theta_{2 k}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

By iterated expectations again, $E\left(\theta_{i} \mid X, \epsilon\right)=\theta \Longrightarrow E\left(\theta_{i} \mid X\right)=\theta$, and

$$
\begin{align*}
E\left(D_{k} \mid X\right) & =E\left(E\left(D_{k} \mid X, \theta\right) \mid X\right) \\
& =\frac{1}{2} E\left(\theta_{2 k-1}+\theta_{2 k} \mid X\right) \\
& =\theta \tag{B.11}
\end{align*}
$$

Note that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{cov}\left(\theta_{i}, \epsilon_{i} \mid X\right) & =E\left(\theta_{i} \epsilon_{i} \mid X\right)-E\left(\theta_{i} \mid X\right) E\left(\epsilon_{i} \mid X\right) \\
& =E\left(\theta_{i} \epsilon_{i} \mid X\right) \text { since } E\left(\epsilon_{i} \mid X\right)=0 \\
& =E\left(E\left(\theta_{i} \epsilon_{i} \mid X, \epsilon\right) \mid X\right) \\
& =E\left(\epsilon_{i} E\left(\theta_{i} \mid X, \epsilon\right) \mid X\right) \\
& =E\left(\epsilon_{i} E\left(\theta_{i}\right) \mid X\right) \text { by A1 } \\
& =E\left(\theta_{i}\right) E\left(\epsilon_{i} \mid X\right) \\
& =0 \text { since } E\left(\epsilon_{i} \mid X\right)=0
\end{aligned}
$$

Now consider

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{var}\left(D_{k} \mid T \cdot X\right)= & T_{2 k-1}\left[\operatorname{var}\left(\theta_{2 k-1} \mid T, X\right)+\operatorname{var}\left(\epsilon_{2 k-1} \mid T, X\right)+\operatorname{var}\left(\epsilon_{2 k} \mid T, X\right)\right] \\
& +\left(1-T_{2 k-1}\right)\left[\operatorname{var}\left(\theta_{2 k} \mid T, X\right)+\operatorname{var}\left(\epsilon_{2 k-1} \mid T, X\right)+\operatorname{var}\left(\epsilon_{2 k} \mid T, X\right)\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $T$ is independent of $X$ and $\theta$ we need not condition on it.

$$
\begin{equation*}
=T_{2 k-1} \operatorname{var}\left(\theta_{2 k-1} \mid X\right)+\left(1-T_{2 k-1}\right) \operatorname{var}\left(\theta_{2 k} \mid X\right)+\operatorname{var}\left(\epsilon_{2 k-1} \mid X\right)+\operatorname{var}\left(\epsilon_{2 k} \mid X\right) \tag{B.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now we obtain the variance conditional just on $X$ from

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{var}\left(D_{k} \mid X\right)=E\left(\operatorname{var}\left(D_{k} \mid T, X\right) \mid X\right)+\operatorname{var}\left(E\left(D_{k} \mid T, X\right) \mid X\right) \tag{B.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

The first term in B. 13 comes from taking the expectation of B. 12 over the distribution of $T_{2 k-1}$. This gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
E\left(\operatorname{var}\left(D_{k} \mid T, X\right) \mid X\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left[\operatorname{var}\left(\theta_{2 k-1} \mid X\right)+\operatorname{var}\left(\theta_{2 k} \mid X\right)\right]+\operatorname{var}\left(\epsilon_{2 k-1} \mid X\right)+\operatorname{var}\left(\epsilon_{2 k} \mid X\right) \tag{B.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

The second term in B. 13 comes from taking the conditional expectation of B. 10 holding $T, X$ fixed and then taking the variance of the result.

$$
\begin{gathered}
E\left(D_{k} \mid T, X\right)=\theta+\left(2 T_{2 k-1}-1\right)\left[r\left(X_{2 k-1}\right)-r\left(X_{2 k}\right)\right] \\
\operatorname{var}\left(E\left(D_{k} \mid T, X\right) \mid X\right)=\left[r\left(X_{2 k-1}\right)-r\left(X_{2 k}\right)\right]^{2}
\end{gathered}
$$

since $\operatorname{var}\left(2 T_{2 k-1}-1\right)=1$. So combining B. 14 and B. 13 gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{var}\left(D_{k} \mid X\right) & =\frac{1}{2}\left[\operatorname{var}\left(\theta_{2 k-1} \mid X\right)+\operatorname{var}\left(\theta_{2 k} \mid X\right)\right] \\
& +\operatorname{var}\left(\epsilon_{2 k-1} \mid X\right)+\operatorname{var}\left(\epsilon_{2 k} \mid X\right) \\
& +\left[r\left(X_{2 k-1}\right)-r\left(X_{2 k}\right)\right]^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

## Furthermore,

$$
\operatorname{cov}\left(D_{k}, D_{h} \mid X\right)=0
$$

since given $X, D_{k}$ is a function of $\left(\left(\theta_{2 k-1}, \theta_{2 k}, \epsilon_{2 k-1}, \epsilon_{2 k}, T_{2 k-1}\right)\right.$, and $D_{h}$ is a function of
$\left(\left(\theta_{2 h-1}, \theta_{2 h}, \epsilon_{2 h-1}, \epsilon_{2 h}, T_{2 h-1}\right)\right.$, and these stochastic terms are independent.

## B. 2 Supplementary Tables

Table B.1: Mean Squared Error for Multiple Randomization Methods 1

| $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=100, N_{\text {experiment }}=100$ |  | Randomization Method |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | $C R$ | $M P Y_{0}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {Ridge }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {LASSO }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {AIC }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {BIC }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {orcl }}$ |
| Labor income (Mexico) | 1.000 | 1.026 | 0.767 | 0.764 | 0.748 | 0.753 | 0.752 |
| Microenterprise profits (Sri Lanka) | 1.000 | 0.960 | 0.864 | 0.861 | 0.870 | 0.892 | 0.869 |
| Math test score (Pakistan) | 1.000 | 1.006 | 0.614 | 0.585 | 0.588 | 0.588 | 0.601 |
| Height z-score (Pakistan) | 1.000 | 0.987 | 0.650 | 0.681 | 0.677 | 0.666 | 0.679 |
| Household expenditures (Indonesia) | 1.000 | 0.953 | 0.738 | 0.738 | 0.772 | 0.772 | 0.737 |
| Child schooling (Indonesia) | 1.000 | 1.010 | 0.848 | 0.891 | 0.899 | 0.877 | 0.871 |

Notes: This table gives mean squared error estimates relative to complete randomization. CR is complete randomization, that is, under no stratification. $M P Y_{0}$ is matching on the lagged value of the outcome in each dataset. The next four columns $M P \hat{Y}_{x}$ match pairs according to the predicted outcome, where the prediction is formed from a training dataset using method $x$. Ridge uses ridge regression (Tibshirani 1996) where the penalty term is chosen to minimize the mean squared error under ten-fold cross validation. LAS S $O$ uses the least absolute shrinkage and selection operator (Tibshirani,1996) where the penalty term is chosen to minimize the mean squared error under ten-fold cross validation. AIC uses the model among the $2^{7}$ sub-models that has the lowest value of the Akaike information criterion (Akaike, 1974). BIC uses the model among the $2^{7}$ sub-models that has the lowest value of the Bayes information criterion (Schwarz, 1978). In each of the four methods the full model is linear in a constant and the seven "balancing variables" and corresponds to the data generating process. The size of the the training sample used to estimate these predictors is $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=100$ and the total number of unit in each simulated experiment is $N_{\text {experiment }}=100$.

Table B.2: Size control for Multiple Randomization Methods 1

| $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=100, N_{\text {experiment }}=100$ | Randomization Method |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | $C R$ | $M P Y_{0}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {Ridge }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {LASSO }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {AIC }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {BIC }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {orcl }}$ |
| Labor income (Mexico) | 0.050 | 0.051 | 0.050 | 0.051 | 0.048 | 0.051 | 0.047 |
| Microenterprise profits (Sri Lanka) | 0.054 | 0.051 | 0.051 | 0.049 | 0.049 | 0.049 | 0.047 |
| Math test score (Pakistan) | 0.051 | 0.051 | 0.050 | 0.048 | 0.051 | 0.051 | 0.047 |
| Height z-score (Pakistan) | 0.052 | 0.049 | 0.048 | 0.052 | 0.052 | 0.052 | 0.054 |
| Household expenditures (Indonesia) | 0.051 | 0.046 | 0.049 | 0.048 | 0.050 | 0.052 | 0.048 |
| Child schooling (Indonesia) | 0.049 | 0.051 | 0.049 | 0.053 | 0.050 | 0.046 | 0.052 |

Notes: This table gives the rejection rates for .95 significance tests using multiple randomization methods. The randomizations methods and sample sizes are described in Table 2.5 .

Table B.3: Power for Multiple Randomization Methods 1

| $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=100, N_{\text {experiment }}=100$ |  | Randomization Method |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | TE | $C R$ | $M P Y_{0}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {Ridge }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {LASSO }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {AIC }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {BIC }}$ | MP $\hat{Y}_{\text {orcl }}$ |
| Labor income (Mexico) | 0.19 | 0.147 | 0.143 | 0.190 | 0.182 | 0.177 | 0.181 | 0.177 |
| Microenterprise profits (Sri Lanka) | 0.12 | 0.097 | 0.087 | 0.093 | 0.094 | 0.090 | 0.097 | 0.097 |
| Math test score (Pakistan) | 0.23 | 0.203 | 0.195 | 0.288 | 0.292 | 0.304 | 0.299 | 0.290 |
| Height z-score (Pakistan) | 0.26 | 0.242 | 0.248 | 0.332 | 0.342 | 0.334 | 0.333 | 0.326 |
| Household expenditures (Indonesia) | 0.52 | 0.726 | 0.726 | 0.831 | 0.827 | 0.818 | 0.815 | 0.832 |
| Child schooling (Indonesia) | 0.24 | 0.218 | 0.212 | 0.240 | 0.237 | 0.231 | 0.229 | 0.239 |

Notes: This table gives the rejection rates for .95 significance tests, under the treatment effect given under column $T E$, using multiple randomization methods. The treatment effects are presented as standard deviations of the outcome variable. The randomizations methods and sample sizes are described in Table 2.5 .

Table B.4: Mean Squared Error for Multiple Randomization Methods 2

| $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=2000, N_{\text {experiment }}=30$ | Randomization Method |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | $C R$ | $M P Y_{0}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {Ridge }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {LASSO }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {AIC }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {BIC }}$ | MP $\hat{Y}_{\text {orcl }}$ |
| Labor income (Mexico) | 1.000 | 1.001 | 0.796 | 0.768 | 0.776 | 0.806 | 0.773 |
| Microenterprise profits (Sri Lanka) | 1.000 | 0.966 | 0.885 | 0.877 | 0.884 | 0.865 | 0.853 |
| Math test score (Pakistan) | 1.000 | 0.997 | 0.594 | 0.583 | 0.577 | 0.595 | 0.577 |
| Height z-score (Pakistan) | 1.000 | 0.971 | 0.640 | 0.648 | 0.659 | 0.679 | 0.643 |
| Household expenditures (Indonesia) | 1.000 | 1.056 | 0.752 | 0.742 | 0.826 | 0.802 | 0.749 |
| Child schooling (Indonesia) | 1.000 | 0.961 | 0.826 | 0.834 | 0.846 | 0.839 | 0.842 |

Notes: This table gives mean squared error estimates relative to complete randomization. CR is complete randomization, that is, under no stratification. $M P Y_{0}$ is matching on the lagged value of the outcome in each dataset. The next four columns $M P \hat{Y}_{x}$ match pairs according to the predicted outcome, where the prediction is formed from a training dataset using method $x$. Ridge uses ridge regression (Tibshirani 1996) where the penalty term is chosen to minimize the mean squared error under ten-fold cross validation. $L A S S O$ uses the least absolute shrinkage and selection operator (Tibshirani,1996) where the penalty term is chosen to minimize the mean squared error under ten-fold cross validation. AIC uses the model among the $2^{7}$ sub-models that has the lowest value of the Akaike information criterion (Akaike 1974). BIC uses the model among the $2^{7}$ sub-models that has the lowest value of the Bayes information criterion (Schwarz 1978). In each of the four methods the full model is linear in a constant and the seven "balancing variables" and corresponds to the data generating process. The size of the the training sample used to estimate these predictors is $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=2000$ and the total number of unit in each simulated experiment is $N_{\text {experiment }}=100$.

Table B.5: Size control for Multiple Randomization Methods 2

| $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=2000, N_{\text {experiment }}=30$ | Randomization Method |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | $C R$ | $M P Y_{0}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {Ridge }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {LASSO }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {AIC }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {BIC }}$ | MP $\hat{Y}_{\text {orcl }}$ |
| Labor income (Mexico) | 0.048 | 0.049 | 0.054 | 0.051 | 0.050 | 0.049 | 0.050 |
| Microenterprise profits (Sri Lanka) | 0.050 | 0.050 | 0.053 | 0.052 | 0.051 | 0.047 | 0.048 |
| Math test score (Pakistan) | 0.052 | 0.053 | 0.049 | 0.049 | 0.047 | 0.052 | 0.051 |
| Height z-score (Pakistan) | 0.052 | 0.050 | 0.047 | 0.051 | 0.051 | 0.050 | 0.050 |
| Household expenditures (Indonesia) | 0.047 | 0.055 | 0.048 | 0.045 | 0.052 | 0.051 | 0.049 |
| Child schooling (Indonesia) | 0.052 | 0.050 | 0.048 | 0.050 | 0.050 | 0.050 | 0.051 |

Notes: This table gives the rejection rates for .95 significance tests using multiple randomization methods. The randomizations methods and sample sizes are described in Table 2.5 .

Table B.6: Power for Multiple Randomization Methods 2

| $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=2000, N_{\text {experiment }}=30$ | Randomization Method |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | TE | CR | $M P Y_{0}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {Ridge }}$ | MP $\hat{Y}_{\text {LASSO }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{A I C}$ | MP $\hat{Y}_{\text {BIC }}$ | MP $\hat{Y}_{\text {orcl }}$ |
| Labor income (Mexico) | 0.18 | 0.077 | 0.074 | 0.085 | 0.088 | 0.082 | 0.084 | 0.085 |
| Microenterprise profits (Sri Lanka) | 0.12 | 0.066 | 0.060 | 0.063 | 0.060 | 0.063 | 0.059 | 0.060 |
| Math test score (Pakistan) | 0.23 | 0.096 | 0.094 | 0.110 | 0.118 | 0.113 | 0.121 | 0.121 |
| Height z-score (Pakistan) | 0.26 | 0.110 | 0.102 | 0.124 | 0.127 | 0.127 | 0.130 | 0.122 |
| Household expenditures (Indonesia) | 0.51 | 0.269 | 0.263 | 0.340 | 0.334 | 0.317 | 0.318 | 0.328 |
| Child schooling (Indonesia) | 0.24 | 0.101 | 0.091 | 0.102 | 0.104 | 0.104 | 0.105 | 0.101 |

Notes: This table gives the rejection rates for .95 significance tests, under the treatment effect given under column $T E$, using multiple randomization methods. The treatment effects are presented as standard deviations of the outcome variable. The randomizations methods and sample sizes are described in Table 2.5.

Table B.7: Mean Squared Error for Multiple Randomization Methods 3

| $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=2000, N_{\text {experiment }}=300$ |  |  | Randomization Method |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | $C R$ | $M P Y_{0}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {Ridge }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {LASSO }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {AIC }}$ | MP $\hat{Y}_{\text {BIC }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {orcl }}$ |
| Labor income (Mexico) | 1.000 | 0.963 | 0.717 | 0.705 | 0.713 | 0.714 | 0.702 |
| Microenterprise profits (Sri Lanka) | 1.000 | 0.989 | 0.902 | 0.879 | 0.865 | 0.913 | 0.873 |
| Math test score (Pakistan) | 1.000 | 1.019 | 0.604 | 0.574 | 0.591 | 0.583 | 0.574 |
| Height z-score (Pakistan) | 1.000 | 1.008 | 0.674 | 0.655 | 0.667 | 0.666 | 0.661 |
| Household expenditures (Indonesia) | 1.000 | 0.984 | 0.718 | 0.737 | 0.753 | 0.779 | 0.733 |
| Child schooling (Indonesia) | 1.000 | 0.983 | 0.835 | 0.856 | 0.867 | 0.848 | 0.846 |

Notes: This table gives mean squared error estimates relative to complete randomization. CR is complete randomization, that is, under no stratification. $M P Y_{0}$ is matching on the lagged value of the outcome in each dataset. The next four columns $M P \hat{Y}_{x}$ match pairs according to the predicted outcome, where the prediction is formed from a training dataset using method $x$. Ridge uses ridge regression (Tibshirani 1996) where the penalty term is chosen to minimize the mean squared error under ten-fold cross validation. $L A S S O$ uses the least absolute shrinkage and selection operator (Tibshirani,1996) where the penalty term is chosen to minimize the mean squared error under ten-fold cross validation. AIC uses the model among the $2^{7}$ sub-models that has the lowest value of the Akaike information criterion (Akaike 1974). BIC uses the model among the $2^{7}$ sub-models that has the lowest value of the Bayes information criterion (Schwarz 1978). In each of the four methods the full model is linear in a constant and the seven "balancing variables" and corresponds to the data generating process. The size of the the training sample used to estimate these predictors is $N_{\text {trainingsample }}$ and the total number of unit in each simulated experiment is $N_{\text {experiment }}$.

Table B.8: Size control for Multiple Randomization Methods 3

| $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=2000, N_{\text {experiment }}=300$ |  | Randomization Method |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | $C R$ | $M P Y_{0}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {Ridge }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {LASSO }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {AIC }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {BIC }}$ | MP $\hat{Y}_{\text {orcl }}$ |
| Labor income (Mexico) | 0.054 | 0.048 | 0.050 | 0.052 | 0.052 | 0.049 | 0.049 |
| Microenterprise profits (Sri Lanka) | 0.052 | 0.050 | 0.055 | 0.050 | 0.045 | 0.053 | 0.049 |
| Math test score (Pakistan) | 0.049 | 0.052 | 0.050 | 0.049 | 0.050 | 0.048 | 0.048 |
| Height z-score (Pakistan) | 0.049 | 0.049 | 0.053 | 0.049 | 0.051 | 0.049 | 0.051 |
| Household expenditures (Indonesia) | 0.052 | 0.049 | 0.051 | 0.054 | 0.047 | 0.052 | 0.049 |
| Child schooling (Indonesia) | 0.049 | 0.046 | 0.051 | 0.052 | 0.053 | 0.051 | 0.052 |

Notes: This table gives the rejection rates for .95 significance tests using multiple randomization methods. The randomizations methods and sample sizes are described in Table 2.5.

Table B.9: Power for Multiple Randomization Methods 3

| $N_{\text {trainingsample }}=2000, N_{\text {experiment }}=300$ |  | Randomization Method |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | TE | $C R$ | $M P Y_{0}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {Ridge }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {LASSO }}$ | $M P \hat{Y}_{\text {AIC }}$ | MP $\hat{Y}_{\text {BIC }}$ | MP $\hat{Y}_{\text {orcl }}$ |
| Labor income (Mexico) | 0.18 | 0.359 | 0.361 | 0.464 | 0.473 | 0.465 | 0.464 | 0.464 |
| Microenterprise profits (Sri Lanka) | 0.12 | 0.180 | 0.173 | 0.191 | 0.196 | 0.198 | 0.199 | 0.193 |
| Math test score (Pakistan) | 0.24 | 0.492 | 0.503 | 0.706 | 0.736 | 0.722 | 0.718 | 0.730 |
| Height z-score (Pakistan) | 0.27 | 0.611 | 0.600 | 0.787 | 0.784 | 0.776 | 0.771 | 0.790 |
| Household expenditures (Indonesia) | 0.51 | 0.993 | 0.994 | 0.999 | 0.999 | 0.999 | 0.998 | 0.999 |
| Child schooling (Indonesia) | 0.24 | 0.531 | 0.541 | 0.608 | 0.614 | 0.602 | 0.608 | 0.610 |

Notes: This table gives the rejection rates for .95 significance tests, under the treatment effect given under column $T E$, using multiple randomization methods. The treatment effects are presented as standard deviations of the outcome variable. The randomizations methods and sample sizes are described in Table 2.5.

## Appendix C

## Appendix to Chapter 3

## C. 1 Supplementary Tables

Table C.1: Cubic Local Polynomial Results, (CCT)

|  | Number of Enrolled Courses |  |  |  | ex-post GPA |  |  | Enrolled in College |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | all <br> courses in subj | other courses | in same subj | all courses | overall | in subj | stayed in school 1 yr | in 4-yr college | in other 2-yr college | in 4-yr college | in other $2-\mathrm{yr}$ college |
|  | in Current Term |  | Next Term |  |  |  |  | w/ in 3 yrs |  | Next Term |  |
| overall | - | 0.071 | 3.558 | -0.0550 | -0.306 | -0.0486 | -0.107 | 0.0805 | 0.0305 | -0.0448 | -0.0319 |
| s.e. | $\begin{aligned} & 1.769 * * * \\ & (0.397) \end{aligned}$ | (0.377) | (18.99) | (0.439) | (0.246) | (0.894) | (0.136) | (0.119) | (0.0948) | (0.0681) | (0.0504) |
| Obs. | 23,138 | 34,004 | 9,298 | 23,132 | 22,033 | 17,507 | 34,127 | 34,127 | 34,127 | 34,127 | 34,127 |
| Males | - | 0.635 | 1.025 | -0.101 | - | 0.383 | 0.151 | -0.0974 | -0.0312 | -0.0485 | -0.0477 |
| s.e. | $\begin{aligned} & 1.180 * * * \\ & (0.454) \end{aligned}$ | (0.417) | (1.492) | (0.482) | $\begin{aligned} & 0.769 * * \\ & (0.389) \end{aligned}$ | (1.239) | (0.154) | (0.135) | (0.106) | (0.0774) | (0.0572) |
| Obs. | 11,321 | 16,632 | 4,670 | 11,391 | 14,919 | 8,557 | 16,682 | 16,682 | 16,682 | 16,682 | 16,682 |
| Females | - | -0.931 | 1.582 | 0.0796 | -0.280 | -0.574 | -0.525* | 0.417 | 0.156 | -0.0239 | 0.000487 |
| s.e. | $\begin{aligned} & 2.429 * * * \\ & (0.803) \end{aligned}$ | (0.842) | (1.598) | (0.913) | (0.691) | (1.366) | (0.303) | (0.258) | (0.192) | (0.132) | (0.0983) |
| Obs. | 11,763 | 17,300 | 4,599 | 11,688 | 15,280 | 8,911 | 17,373 | 17,373 | 17,373 | 17,373 | 17,373 |
| Non-First Time | - | 0.232 | 1.725 | -0.207 | - | -0.573 | -0.0530 | -0.0229 | 0.0665 | -0.108 | -0.0604 |
| s.e. | $\begin{aligned} & 1.620 * * * \\ & (0.621) \end{aligned}$ | (0.419) | (4.716) | (0.476) | $\begin{aligned} & 0.587 * * \\ & (0.292) \end{aligned}$ | (1.897) | (0.151) | (0.136) | (0.105) | (0.0808) | (0.0560) |
| Obs. | 18,956 | 27,591 | 7,676 | 18,722 | 17,835 | 14,640 | 27,692 | 27,692 | 27,692 | 27,692 | 27,692 |
| Fist-Time | - | -0.573 | 0.406 | 0.725 | 0.652 | 0.372 | -0.324 | 0.526* | -0.141 | 0.231* | 0.0814 |
| s.e. | $\begin{aligned} & 1.926 * * * \\ & (0.446) \end{aligned}$ | (0.899) | (6.470) | (1.243) | (0.741) | (0.642) | (0.321) | (0.292) | (0.230) | (0.140) | (0.122) |
| Obs. | 4,182 | 6,413 | 1,844 | 4,410 | 5,674 | 2,867 | 6,435 | 6,435 | 6,435 | 6,435 | 6,435 |
| Non-foreign | - | 0.0269 | 0.0757 | 0.0726 | -0.236 | 1.188 | -0.0819 | -0.156 | 0.198* | -0.0547 | 0.0195 |
| s.e. | $\begin{aligned} & 1.690 * * * \\ & (0.399) \end{aligned}$ | (0.406) | (1.737) | (0.466) | (0.373) | (1.286) | (0.150) | (0.455) | (0.114) | (0.0747) | (0.0595) |
| Obs. | 15,986 | 23,910 | 5,804 | 15,688 | 21,017 | 11,941 | 24,008 | 34,042 | 24,008 | 24,008 | 24,008 |
| Foreign | -1.885** | 0.156 | 0.719 | -0.355 | -1.593* | -2.308 | -0.185 | -0.102 | - | -0.0170 | -0.183* |
| s.e. | (0.870) | (0.860) | (0.619) | (1.065) | (0.920) | (1.881) | (0.298) | (0.262) | $\begin{aligned} & 0.463 * * \\ & (0.233) \end{aligned}$ | (0.154) | (0.106) |
| Obs. | 7,152 | 10,094 | 2,874 | 7,444 | 9,248 | 5,566 | 10,119 | 10,119 | 10,119 | 10,119 | 10,119 |
| Minority | 4.483 | 0.0434 | -1.274 | 0.849 | -1.028 | -0.401 | -0.524 | 1.234 | 0.0781 | 0.188 | -0.0459 |
| s.e. | (6.973) | (1.990) | (2.903) | (1.306) | (2.376) | (1.142) | (0.761) | (0.960) | (0.638) | (0.267) | (0.278) |
| Obs. | 3,874 | 5,821 | 1,537 | 3,664 | 4,913 | 3,223 | 5,847 | 5,847 | 7,134 | 5,847 | 5,847 |
| Asian | - | 0.397 | 0.635 | -0.220 | -0.619 | -0.434 | -0.100 | -0.164 | 0.0278 | -0.0570 | -0.0231 |
|  | $\begin{aligned} & 1.118 * * * \\ & (0.367) \end{aligned}$ | (0.514) | (1.364) | (0.614) | (0.431) | (0.776) | (0.187) | (0.175) | (0.131) | (0.0987) | (0.0662) |
| Obs. | 11,497 | 16,678 | 5,145 | 12,125 | 15,188 | 8,838 | 16,721 | 16,721 | 16,721 | 16,721 | 16,721 |
| White | - | -0.825 | -0.0257 | -0.246 | -0.603 | 0.953 | -0.101 | 0.162 | -0.391 | -0.0798 | 0.0297 |
| s.e. | $\begin{aligned} & 1.637 * * * \\ & (0.559) \end{aligned}$ | (0.630) | (1.505) | (0.631) | (0.662) | (1.147) | (0.687) | (0.193) | (0.541) | (0.118) | (0.0805) |
| Obs. | 4,884 | 7,108 | 2,241 | 4,555 | 6,339 | 3,842 | 8,696 | 7,139 | 8,696 | 7,139 | 7,139 |
| Old | -3.722 | 0.619 | 1.002 | -0.292 | -0.818 | 7.654 | 0.267 | 0.325 | -0.0371 | -0.170 | -0.0207 |
| s.e. | (3.731) | (0.885) | (1.501) | (0.966) | (0.659) | (30.53) | (0.292) | (0.255) | (0.192) | (0.159) | (0.107) |
| Obs. | 7,920 | 11,481 | 3,963 | 6,680 | 9,782 | 7,414 | 11,544 | 11,544 | 11,544 | 11,544 | 11,544 |
| Young | - | -0.191 | 1.140 | 0.0154 | -0.413 | 0.155 | -0.260* | -0.0193 | 0.0509 | 0.00273 | -0.0361 |
|  | $\begin{aligned} & 1.475 * * * \\ & (0.306) \end{aligned}$ | (0.397) | (2.455) | (0.479) | (0.402) | (0.795) | (0.156) | (0.136) | (0.109) | (0.0742) | (0.0565) |
| Obs. | 15,218 | 22,523 | 7,138 | 16,452 | 20,483 | 11,501 | 22,583 | 22,583 | 22,583 | 22,583 | 22,583 |

This table presents estimates of the regression discontinuity estimates using two stage least squares and the method of bandwidth selection developed by CCT(2013a 2013b). The estimates use a third order polynomial to approximate the underlying regression function, the expected outcome conditional on the running variable as a function of the running variable. In the CCT algorithm that selects bandwidth a fourth order polynomial is used to estimate bias due to functional form misspecification. The bandwidth selected using this method is usually between two and three.

Table C.2: Local Linear TSLS, with control variables (BW of 5)

|  | Number of Enrolled Courses |  |  |  | ex-post GPA |  |  | Enrolled in College |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | all courses in subj | other courses | in same subj | all courses | overall | in subj | stayed <br> in <br> school <br> 1 yr | $\begin{aligned} & \hline \text { in 4-yr } \\ & \text { college } \end{aligned}$ | in other $2-\mathrm{yr}$ college | in 4-yr college | in other <br> $2-\mathrm{yr}$ <br> college |
|  | in Current Term |  | Next Term |  |  |  |  | w/ in 3 yrs |  | Next Term |  |
| overall | - | 0.138 | 0.0864 | 0.448 | -0.0662 | 0.422 | -0.0828 | 0.273** | 0.0780 | 0.0576 | 0.00205 |
| s.e. | $\begin{aligned} & 1.943 * * * \\ & (0.470) \end{aligned}$ | (0.338) | (0.441) | (0.435) | (0.329) | (0.831) | (0.110) | (0.122) | (0.0941) | (0.0683) | (0.0496) |
| Obs. | 27,403 | 40,442 | 8,930 | 27,363 | 36,058 | 20,881 | 40,593 | 40,593 | 40,593 | 40,593 | 40,593 |
| Males | - | 0.0719 | -0.694 | 0.596 | -0.292 | 0.0525 | -0.0955 | 0.0658 | 0.0322 | 0.0171 | -0.0483 |
| s.e. | $\begin{aligned} & 1.852 * * * \\ & (0.564) \end{aligned}$ | (0.416) | (0.720) | (0.557) | (0.420) | (1.026) | (0.140) | (0.149) | (0.120) | (0.0863) | (0.0653) |
| Obs. | 13,375 | 19,719 | 4,461 | 13,420 | 17,685 | 10,156 | 19,781 | 19,781 | 19,781 | 19,781 | 19,781 |
| Females | -2.044** | 0.327 | 0.877 | 0.368 | 0.215 | 0.729 | -0.0525 | 0.520** | 0.137 | 0.0975 | 0.0616 |
| s.e. | (0.798) | (0.568) | (0.736) | (0.695) | (0.541) | (1.407) | (0.177) | (0.220) | (0.154) | (0.112) | (0.0797) |
| Obs. | 14,028 | 20,723 | 4,469 | 13,943 | 18,373 | 10,725 | 20,812 | 20,812 | 20,812 | 20,812 | 20,812 |
| Non-First Time Students | $-1.653$ | 0.482 | 0.280 | 0.463 | -0.329 | 0.989 | -0.105 | 0.287* | 0.0824 | 0.0189 | $-0.0284$ |
| s.e. | (1.043) | (0.432) | (0.614) | (0.535) | (0.419) | (1.974) | (0.143) | (0.158) | (0.117) | (0.0905) | (0.0616) |
| Obs. | 22,326 | 32,611 | 7,301 | 21,991 | 29,122 | 17,339 | 32,733 | 32,733 | 32,733 | 32,733 | 32,733 |
| Fist-Time Students | - | -0.679 | -0.305 | 0.466 | 0.629 | 0.197 | 0.000616 | 0.229 | 0.0635 | 0.140* | 0.0677 |
|  | $\begin{aligned} & 2.079 * * * \\ & (0.377) \end{aligned}$ | (0.542) | (0.608) | (0.717) | (0.536) | (0.589) | (0.142) | (0.172) | (0.154) | (0.0831) | (0.0851) |
| Obs. | 5,077 | 7,831 | 1,629 | 5,372 | 6,936 | 3,542 | 7,860 | 7,860 | 7,860 | 7,860 | 7,860 |
| Non-foreign Students | - | -0.0154 | -0.391 | 0.275 | 0.0409 | 1.592 | -0.119 | 0.353** | 0.152 | 0.0402 | 0.0365 |
| s.e. | $\begin{aligned} & 2.164^{* * *} \\ & (0.544) \end{aligned}$ | (0.408) | (0.856) | (0.502) | (0.394) | (1.142) | (0.138) | (0.156) | (0.124) | (0.0839) | (0.0658) |
| Obs. | 18,945 | 28,486 | 5,585 | 18,586 | 25,080 | 14,225 | 28,607 | 28,607 | 28,607 | 28,607 | 28,607 |
| Foreign Students | -1.696* | 0.350 | 0.292 | 0.686 | -0.399 | -2.524 | -0.0551 | 0.0911 | -0.0601 | 0.0916 | -0.0587 |
| s.e. | (0.931) | (0.606) | (0.501) | (0.849) | (0.595) | (2.193) | (0.179) | (0.196) | (0.142) | (0.118) | (0.0716) |
| Obs. | 8,458 | 11,956 | 3,345 | 8,777 | 10,978 | 6,656 | 11,986 | 11,986 | 11,986 | 11,986 | 11,986 |
| Minority Students | - | 0.812*** | 0.155 | -0.698* | 0.158 | -0.549 | -0.175* | 0.0662 | 0.0609 | -0.0145 |  |
|  | 1.706*** |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | 0.00835 |
| s.e. | (0.661) | (0.305) | (0.281) | (0.424) | (0.303) | (2.686) | (0.0982) | (0.0845) | (0.0835) | (0.0458) | (0.0497) |
| Obs. | 7,173 | 11,569 | 2,147 | 7,105 | 9,782 | 5,166 | 11,639 | 11,639 | 11,639 | 11,639 | 11,639 |
| Asian Students | -1.227** | 0.140 | 0.258 | 0.563 | 0.282 | 0.325 | -0.0830 | -0.0231 | 0.100 | 0.0435 | 0.0723 |
| s.e. | (0.555) | (0.538) | (0.943) | (0.722) | (0.498) | (0.967) | (0.172) | (0.193) | (0.149) | (0.112) | (0.0765) |
| Obs. | 13,683 | 19,982 | 4,934 | 14,407 | 18,182 | 10,587 | 20,031 | 20,031 | 20,031 | 20,031 | 20,031 |
| White Students | - | -0.0181 | 0.534 | 0.829 | -0.596 | 0.404 | - | 0.303* | 0.151 | -0.0121 | 0.0609 |
|  | $\begin{aligned} & 1.554 * * * \\ & (0.527) \end{aligned}$ | (0.497) | (0.548) | (0.533) | (0.503) | (0.935) | $\begin{aligned} & 0.370 * * \\ & (0.182) \end{aligned}$ | (0.184) | (0.142) | (0.105) | (0.0759) |
| Obs. | 5,729 | 8,343 | 1,658 | 5,336 | 7,454 | 4,513 | 8,377 | 8,377 | 8,377 | 8,377 | 8,377 |
| Old Students | -4.058 | 0.284 | 0.445 | 0.0430 | -0.277 | 3.184 | 0.485* | 0.651** | -0.0210 | 0.0641 | -0.0641 |
| s.e. | (7.204) | (0.772) | (0.647) | (0.948) | (0.673) | (13.49) | (0.288) | (0.309) | (0.195) | (0.159) | (0.106) |
| Obs. | 9,360 | 13,606 | 2,954 | 7,995 | 11,658 | 7,126 | 13,682 | 13,682 | 13,682 | 13,682 | 13,682 |
| Young Students | - | 0.126 | -0.591 | 0.609 | 0.108 | 0.418 | - | 0.170 | 0.0997 | 0.0589 | 0.0211 |
|  | 1.849*** |  |  |  |  |  | 0.245** |  |  |  |  |
| s.e. | (0.363) | (0.360) | (0.648) | (0.484) | (0.372) | (0.720) | (0.120) | (0.133) | (0.107) | (0.0723) | (0.0561) |
| Obs. | 18,043 | 26,836 | 5,976 | 19,368 | 24,400 | 13,755 | 26,911 | 26,911 | 26,911 | 26,911 | 26,911 |
| Cum. Course credits | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| Cum. Enrolled courses | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| First Time Status | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| Received Fin. Aid | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| Female | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| Goal Voc. Cert. | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| Goal 4-yr Degree | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |

These regressions allow for linear functions of the running variable with different slopes on either side of the threshold. They also control for cumulative course credits earned, cumulative number of courses taken, whether the semester is the student's first, whether the student received financial aid, gender, and whether the student declared an intention to obtain a vocational certificate or transfer to a four year college. Here we use a rectangular kernel with a bandwidth of five on either side of the threshold.

$$
E(Y \mid R V, W)=\alpha+\delta^{\prime} W+Z \cdot \beta+\gamma^{0} R V+\gamma^{1} Z \cdot R V
$$

Table C.3: Local Linear TSLS, with more extensive control variables (BW of 5)

|  | Number of Enrolled Courses |  |  |  | ex-post GPA |  | stayed in school 1 yr | Enrolled in College |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | all courses in subj | other courses | in same subj | all courses | overall | in subj |  | in 4-yr college | in other $2-\mathrm{yr}$ <br> college | in 4-yr college | in other $2-\mathrm{yr}$ <br> college |
|  | in Current Term |  | Next Term |  |  |  |  | w/ in 3 yrs |  | Next Term |  |
| overall | - | 0.261 | 0.242 | 0.436 | -0.0656 | 0.565 | -0.0897 | 0.203* | 0.0357 | 0.0662 | -0.0117 |
|  | 1.340*** |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| s.e. | (0.337) | (0.343) | (0.342) | (0.449) | (0.344) | (0.825) | (0.101) | (0.122) | (0.0966) | (0.0703) | (0.0514) |
| Obs. | 27,398 | 40,431 | 8,929 | 27,355 | 36,047 | 20,876 | 40,582 | 40,582 | 40,582 | 40,582 | 40,582 |
| Males | - | 0.174 | 0.0253 | 0.703 | -0.292 | 0.235 | -0.0213 | -0.0358 | -0.0235 | 0.00410 | -0.0738 |
|  | $\begin{aligned} & 1.327 * * * \\ & (0.484) \end{aligned}$ | (0.444) | (0.487) | (0.601) | (0.470) | (1.203) | (0.133) | (0.159) | (0.129) | (0.0930) | (0.0715) |
| Obs. | 13,373 | 19,714 | 4,460 | 13,416 | 17,680 | 10,154 | 19,776 | 19,776 | 19,776 | 19,776 | 19,776 |
| Females | - | 0.436 | 0.457 | 0.207 | 0.233 | 0.550 | -0.148 | 0.460** | 0.117 | 0.143 | 0.0545 |
|  | $\begin{aligned} & 1.293 * * * \\ & (0.474) \end{aligned}$ | (0.542) | (0.491) | (0.691) | (0.523) | (1.123) | (0.156) | (0.205) | (0.150) | (0.111) | (0.0777) |
| Obs. | 14,025 | 20,717 | 4,469 | 13,939 | 18,367 | 10,722 | 20,806 | 20,806 | 20,806 | 20,806 | 20,806 |
| Non-First Time Students | -0.583 | 0.552 | 0.530 | 0.450 | -0.376 | 0.791 | -0.0803 | 0.200 | 0.0279 | 0.0376 | -0.0402 |
| s.e. | (0.645) | (0.435) | (0.493) | (0.541) | (0.440) | (1.483) | (0.130) | (0.155) | (0.119) | (0.0923) | (0.0633) |
| Obs. | 22,321 | 32,600 | 7,300 | 21,983 | 29,111 | 17,334 | 32,722 | 32,722 | 32,722 | 32,722 | 32,722 |
| Fist-Time Students | - | -0.238 | -0.442 | 0.379 | 0.835 | 0.765 | -0.0929 | 0.184 | 0.0426 | 0.113 | 0.0730 |
| s.e. | $\begin{aligned} & 1.915 * * * \\ & (0.345) \end{aligned}$ | (0.506) | (0.442) | (0.767) | (0.562) | (0.745) | (0.127) | (0.169) | (0.156) | (0.0815) | (0.0861) |
| Obs. | 5,077 | 7,831 | 1,629 | 5,372 | 6,936 | 3,542 | 7,860 | 7,860 | 7,860 | 7,860 | 7,860 |
| Non-foreign Students | - | 0.0774 | 0.525 | 0.210 | 0.0483 | 1.679 | -0.129 | 0.284* | 0.0977 | 0.0457 | 0.0198 |
|  | $\begin{aligned} & 1.389 * * * \\ & (0.359) \end{aligned}$ | (0.412) | (0.686) | (0.522) | (0.417) | (1.093) | (0.126) | (0.154) | (0.125) | (0.0857) | (0.0674) |
| Obs. | 18,942 | 28,478 | 5,584 | 18,581 | 25,072 | 14,222 | 28,599 | 28,599 | 28,599 | 28,599 | 28,599 |
| Foreign Students | -1.360* | 0.460 | 0.0781 | 0.899 | -0.493 | -2.600 | -0.0439 | 0.0311 | -0.0688 | 0.0930 | -0.0572 |
| s.e. | (0.731) | (0.627) | (0.423) | (0.933) | (0.605) | (2.083) | (0.167) | (0.203) | (0.150) | (0.124) | (0.0754) |
| Obs. | 8,456 | 11,953 | 3,345 | 8,774 | 10,975 | 6,654 | 11,983 | 11,983 | 11,983 | 11,983 | 11,983 |
| Minority Students | - | 0.636** | 0.0452 | -0.511 | 0.189 | - | -0.0999 | 0.0550 | 0.0178 | - | -0.0167 |
|  | 1.373*** |  |  |  |  | 0.00798 |  |  |  | 0.00944 |  |
| s.e. | (0.323) | (0.271) | (0.229) | (0.363) | (0.273) | (1.067) | (0.0805) | (0.0778) | (0.0765) | (0.0422) | (0.0461) |
| Obs. | 7,172 | 11,566 | 2,147 | 7,103 | 9,780 | 5,165 | 11,636 | 11,636 | 11,636 | 11,636 | 11,636 |
| Asian Students | -1.030** | 0.167 | 0.162 | 0.618 | 0.312 | 0.447 | -0.113 | -0.122 | 0.0803 | 0.0806 | 0.0710 |
| s.e. | (0.433) | (0.582) | (0.619) | (0.852) | (0.557) | (0.999) | (0.164) | (0.211) | (0.163) | (0.123) | (0.0838) |
| Obs. | 13,680 | 19,975 | 4,933 | 14,401 | 18,175 | 10,584 | 20,024 | 20,024 | 20,024 | 20,024 | 20,024 |
| White Students | - | 0.0994 | 0.631 | 0.740 | -0.675 | 0.156 | - | 0.258 | 0.0803 | -0.0291 | 0.0398 |
|  | 1.341*** |  |  |  |  |  | 0.373** |  |  |  |  |
| s.e. | (0.446) | (0.481) | (0.475) | (0.518) | (0.521) | (0.853) | (0.163) | (0.176) | (0.137) | (0.103) | (0.0738) |
| Obs. | 5,728 | 8,341 | 1,658 | 5,336 | 7,452 | 4,512 | 8,375 | 8,375 | 8,375 | 8,375 | 8,375 |
| Old Students | -0.426 | 0.636 | 0.414 | 0.124 | -0.219 | 1.508 | 0.356 | 0.592** | -0.0725 | 0.0657 | -0.0819 |
| s.e. | (1.174) | (0.731) | (0.484) | (0.910) | (0.688) | (2.508) | (0.235) | (0.279) | (0.186) | (0.151) | (0.102) |
| Obs. | 9,359 | 13,603 | 2,954 | 7,993 | 11,655 | 7,125 | 13,679 | 13,679 | 13,679 | 13,679 | 13,679 |
| Young Students | - | 0.146 | 0.0849 | 0.537 | 0.117 | 0.642 | - | 0.0933 | 0.0637 | 0.0854 | 0.00949 |
|  | 1.601*** |  |  |  |  |  | 0.238** |  |  |  |  |
| s.e. | (0.324) | (0.372) | (0.460) | (0.509) | (0.390) | (0.873) | (0.112) | (0.137) | (0.112) | (0.0763) | (0.0590) |
| Obs. | 18,039 | 26,828 | 5,975 | 19,362 | 24,392 | 13,751 | 26,903 | 26,903 | 26,903 | 26,903 | 26,903 |
| Race FEs | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| Reg. Priority Group FEs | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| Year $\times$ Term FEs | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| Subj. FEs | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |

These regressions allow for linear functions of the running variable with different slopes on either side of the threshold. As before they control for cumulative course credits earned, cumulative number of courses taken, whether the semester is the student's first, whether the student received financial aid, gender, and whether the student declared an intention to obtain a vocational certificate or transfer to a four year college. They also control for race fixed effects, registration priority group fixed effects, term fixed effects and subject fixed effects. Here we use a rectangular kernel with a bandwidth of five on either side of the threshold.

Table C.4: Local Linear TSLS, with more extensive control variables (BW of 3)

|  | Number of Enrolled Courses |  |  |  | ex-post GPA |  |  | Enrolled in College |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | all courses in subj | other courses | in same subj | all courses | overall | in subj | stayed <br> in <br> school <br> 1 yr | in 4-yr college | in other 2-yr college | in 4-yr college | in other 2-yr college |
|  | in Current Term |  | Next Term |  |  |  |  | w/ in 3 yrs |  | Next Term |  |
| overall | -1.469** | 0.283 | 2.648 | 0.460 | -1.111 | -0.0263 | -0.193 | 0.392 | -0.0437 | 0.0861 | -0.0961 |
| s.e. | (0.579) | (0.726) | (8.075) | (0.843) | (0.787) | (1.257) | (0.217) | (0.271) | (0.201) | (0.146) | (0.110) |
| Obs. | 18,046 | 26,276 | 5,840 | 17,897 | 23,375 | 13,530 | 26,372 | 26,372 | 26,372 | 26,372 | 26,372 |
| Males | -1.067* | 0.685 | -27.74 | 0.359 | -1.357 | -0.547 | 0.0224 | -0.0248 | -0.101 | 0.0259 | -0.0768 |
| s.e. | (0.645) | (0.745) | $(1,026)$ | (0.789) | (0.894) | (1.812) | (0.217) | (0.259) | (0.212) | (0.151) | (0.116) |
| Obs. | 8,840 | 12,850 | 2,955 | 8,773 | 11,520 | 6,613 | 12,891 | 12,891 | 12,891 | 12,891 | 12,891 |
| Females | -2.048 | -0.780 | 8.599 | 0.731 | -0.847 | 0.414 | -0.781 | 1.431 | 0.166 | 0.235 | -0.144 |
| s.e. | (1.437) | $(2.078)$ | (36.20) | (2.879) | (1.760) | (2.071) | (0.773) | (1.199) | (0.522) | (0.398) | (0.286) |
| Obs. | 9,206 | 13,426 | 2,885 | 9,124 | 11,855 | 6,917 | 13,481 | 13,481 | 13,481 | 13,481 | 13,481 |
| Non-First Time Students | -1.321 | 0.643 | -42.70 | 0.146 | -1.995 | 0.0493 | -0.0767 | 0.229 | -0.0932 | 0.0493 | -0.188 |
| s.e. | (1.187) | (0.948) | $(1,261)$ | (1.065) | (1.407) | (3.439) | (0.278) | (0.333) | (0.255) | (0.195) | (0.150) |
| Obs. | 14,650 | 21,127 | 4,738 | 14,352 | 18,831 | 11,225 | 21,205 | 21,205 | 21,205 | 21,205 | 21,205 |
| Fist-Time Students | - | -0.316 | -2.381 | 0.929 | 0.385 | 0.528 | -0.452 | 0.719 | 0.0373 | 0.155 | 0.134 |
|  | 1.585*** |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| s.e. | (0.520) | (1.065) | (5.395) | (1.387) | (0.889) | (0.908) | (0.319) | (0.460) | (0.319) | (0.175) | (0.181) |
| Obs. | 3,396 | 5,149 | 1,102 | 3,545 | 4,544 | 2,305 | 5,167 | 5,167 | 5,167 | 5,167 | 5,167 |
| Non-foreign Students | -1.526** | 0.167 | 0.184 | 0.0895 | -0.578 | 1.338 | -0.226 | 0.598 | 0.231 | 0.0542 | - |
|  | (0.619) | (0.866) | (1.027) | (0.993) | (0.883) | (1.527) | (0.271) | (0.366) | (0.268) | (0.176) | $\begin{aligned} & 0.00124 \\ & (0.139) \end{aligned}$ |
| Obs. | 12,429 | 18,378 | 3,615 | 12,072 | 16,139 | 9,174 | 18,453 | 18,453 | 18,453 | 18,453 | 18,453 |
| Foreign Students | -1.598 | 0.182 | 1.107 | 1.675 | -2.536 | -4.523 | -0.110 | -0.0872 | -0.617 | 0.135 | -0.274 |
| s.e. | (1.353) | (1.400) | (1.091) | (2.052) | (2.102) | (5.185) | (0.378) | (0.455) | (0.455) | (0.278) | (0.215) |
| Obs. | 5,617 | 7,898 | 2,225 | 5,825 | 7,236 | 4,356 | 7,919 | 7,919 | 7,919 | 7,919 | 7,919 |
| Minority Students | - | 0.679** | -0.0293 | -0.569 | 0.227 | -0.0645 | -0.0822 | 0.0770 | 0.0146 | -0.0222 | -0.0334 |
|  | 1.296*** |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| s.e. | (0.332) | (0.279) | (0.236) | (0.392) | (0.283) | (1.096) | (0.0828) | (0.0800) | (0.0786) | (0.0435) | (0.0480) |
| Obs. | 6,820 | 11,013 | 2,047 | 6,768 | 9,300 | 4,915 | 11,080 | 11,080 | 11,080 | 11,080 | 11,080 |
| Asian Students | -0.621 | 0.174 | 1.078 | 0.403 | -0.527 | 0.130 | -0.390 | 0.164 | -0.0877 | 0.225 | -0.130 |
| s.e. | (0.554) | (0.923) | (1.260) | (1.168) | (0.783) | (1.133) | (0.295) | (0.341) | (0.258) | (0.211) | (0.136) |
| Obs. | 8,996 | 12,926 | 3,205 | 9,422 | 11,755 | 6,841 | 12,965 | 12,965 | 12,965 | 12,965 | 12,965 |
| White Students | -2.315** | 0.0505 | -1.460 | -0.124 | -1.648 | -0.989 | -0.227 | 0.473 | 0.0383 | -0.199 | 0.00674 |
| s.e. | (1.088) | (0.943) | (3.053) | (0.801) | (1.229) | (1.536) | (0.294) | (0.369) | (0.261) | (0.212) | (0.142) |
| Obs. | 3,784 | 5,440 | 1,086 | 3,473 | 4,833 | 2,935 | 5,464 | 5,464 | 5,464 | 5,464 | 5,464 |
| Old Students | 5.820 | 4.409 | 0.550 | 0.467 | -4.924 | -1.575 | 0.0641 | 0.886 | 0.373 | -0.113 | -0.466 |
| s.e. | (65.07) | (5.816) | (0.861) | (2.422) | (6.449) | (7.490) | (0.804) | (1.233) | (0.784) | (0.572) | (0.596) |
| Obs. | 6,084 | 8,808 | 1,883 | 5,134 | 7,512 | 4,593 | 8,855 | 8,855 | 8,855 | 8,855 | 8,855 |
| Young Students | - | -0.359 | -0.322 | 0.455 | -0.246 | 0.210 | -0.258 | 0.362 | -0.120 | 0.186 | -0.0205 |
|  | 1.214*** |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| s.e. | (0.391) | (0.676) | (1.142) | (0.912) | (0.685) | (0.965) | (0.202) | (0.261) | (0.200) | (0.141) | (0.105) |
| Obs. | 11,962 | 17,468 | 3,957 | 12,763 | 15,863 | 8,937 | 17,517 | 17,517 | 17,517 | 17,517 | 17,517 |
| Cum. Course credits | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| Cum. Enrolled courses | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| First Time Status | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| Received Fin. Aid | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| Female | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| Goal Voc. Cert. | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |
| Goal 4-yr Degree | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ | $\times$ |

These regressions allow for linear functions of the running variable with different slopes on either side of the threshold. They also control for cumulative course credits earned, cumulative number of courses taken, whether the semester is the student's first, whether the student received financial aid, gender, and whether the student declared an intention to obtain a vocational certificate or transfer to a four year college. Here we use a rectangular kernel with a bandwidth of three on either side of the threshold.


[^0]:    ${ }^{1}$ Co-authored with Rebecca Diamond, Guido W. Imbens, and Michal Kolesar

[^1]:    ${ }^{1}$ Presently, a large portion of released inmates re-enter prison because of technical violations during the twelve months of post-release supervision.

[^2]:    ${ }^{2}$ More precisely, a significant portion of treatment assignments may produce groups that, absent the treatment, expect to have significant differences in the average outcome, and that the magnitude of these differences will be large relative to expected treatment effect sizes.
    ${ }^{3}$ Stratification is generally done for one of two reasons: to estimate heterogeneous treatment effects across strata or to make standard errors smaller. This paper considers the latter.

[^3]:    ${ }^{4}$ For example matching has been coupled with regression adjustment (Rubin, 1973).
    ${ }^{5}$ Casey et al., (2011) discuss the practice of having experiment pre-analysis plans and how these plans add credibility to program analyses by designating controls and outcomes at the design stage of the experiment.

[^4]:    ${ }^{6}$ Dierh et al (1995), Snedecor and Cochran (1979), and Lynn and McCulloch (1992) discuss 'breaking the matches' ex-post in matched pair randomization and find that tests that ignore the procedure are conservative. 'Breaking the matches' is a hybrid design where one matches, but then analyses the data as if matching had not occurred.

[^5]:    ${ }^{7}$ Two interesting but non critical observations are described in appendix A .

[^6]:    ${ }^{8}$ This Bayesian interpretation of the Ridge model suggests a two step procedure as an alternative to the standard practice of normalizing the variance of covariates to one. In the first step, if $k<N$ one can orthonormalize the covariates and estimate the full model to obtain measures of the precision of the coefficients and an initial measure of $\sigma$. In the second step Ridge is estimated with $\lambda$ set to $\sigma^{2}$.

[^7]:    ${ }^{9}$ Income is measured in pesos $(\mathrm{MX} \$ 1=\mathrm{US} \$ 0.1)$
    ${ }^{10}$ The asset index uses seventeen indicators: cell phone; land-line phone; household furniture; clocks and watches; kerosene, gas or electric cooker; iron and heaters; refrigerator or freezer; fans; sewing machines; radios; television sets; bicycles; motorcycles; cars and vans; cameras; pressure lamps; and gold jewelry.

[^8]:    ${ }^{11}$ Bruhn and McKenzie call these "balancing variables" and each of the six datasets has seven of these covariates. Each dataset from Bruhn and McKenzie (2011) has three hundred observations.

[^9]:    ${ }^{12}$ For the schooling outcome in the IFLS data set, since all children are in school at baseline we match on mother's level of education.

[^10]:    ${ }^{13}$ White and Freedman (1978), Pocock and Simon (1975), Pocock (1979), Simon (1979), Birkett (1985), Aickin (2001), Atkinson (2002), Scott et al. (2002), McEntegart (2003), and Rosenberger and Sverdlov (2008) are some in a very extensive literature that addresses various issues in sequential trials. In each case the problem is complicated by many covariates.
    ${ }^{14}$ An upwardly biased probability rather than a completely deterministic assignment rule that places the new patient in the smaller control group of 16 to 25 year olds addresses a worry of having the experimenter bias treatment assignment. Efron (1971) notes that "If the experimenter knows for certain that the next assignment will be a treatment, or a control, he may consciously or unconsciously bias the experiment by such decisions as who is or is not a suitable experimental subject, in which category the subject belongs, etc."
    ${ }^{15}$ There are many extensions of this design. The most well known is Wei (1978) which has an adaptive design that increases the bias with the magnitude of the difference is sizes between the treatment and control group.
    ${ }^{16}$ In general this can be any probability greater than $1 / 2$.

[^11]:    ${ }^{3}$ Thoughout the paper we will use the terms two-year colleges, public two-year colleges and community colleges interchangebly. When referring to private two-year colleges we will note the distinction.
    ${ }^{4}$ In the college we examine the fraction of first-time non-foreign students entering in the fall term who declared an intent to transfer to a four-year college increased from $46 \%$ to $71 \%$ from 2003 to 2007 . The proportion who declared an intent to obtain either a terminal two year degree (associates or vocational), certificate or license, update job skills, or prepare for a new career fell from $25 \%$ in fall 2003 to $11 \%$ in fall 2007.
    ${ }^{5}$ Gill and Leigh (2003) cite two traditional goals for community colleges. One is the "transfer function" and the other and more recent is adult training services. Adult training services include vocational programs but also remedial education. However, for many students remedial education may be the first step in transferring to a four year college.
    ${ }^{6}$ See, for example, Bound, Lovenheim, and Turner (2010, 2012).
    ${ }^{7}$ See Boswell (2000).

[^12]:    ${ }^{8}$ See, for example, Bound \& Turner (2006), Card \& Lemieux (2001a, 2001b), and Fortin (2006).

[^13]:    ${ }^{9}$ In 1992 tuition accounted for ten percent of student expenditures at community colleges. In 1972 tuition accounted for $18 \%$ of student expenditures at community colleges. Author's calculations from Bound, Lowenheim, and Turner (2012) Table 3 panel F.
    ${ }^{10}$ Based on Table 2 page 156 of Deming, Goldin and Katz (2012). Calculated from reported net tuition minus grants and tuition.
    ${ }^{11}$ As reported in Deming, Goldin and Katz (2012) Table 1. Based on summary statistics from the Beginning Postsecondary Students Longitudinal Study for 2003-2004 first-time beginning postsecondary students.
    ${ }^{12}$ Deming, Goldin, Katz (2012) Table 2 page 156.

[^14]:    ${ }^{13}$ For simplicity from here on in this section we only present results for the CCT estimation procedure, results using alternative bandwidths are similar.

